魔技科の剣士と召喚魔王（ヴァシレウス）11

三原みつき
Illustration:CHuN
(Friendly Land)

MF文庫J

Table of Contents

Chapter 1 Long Stagnation and Harems Everyday
Part 1
Part 2
Part 3
Part 4
Part 5
Part 6
Part 7
Part 8
Translator's Notes and References
Chapter 2 Weak Persons Blame(Black is the Color)
Part 1
Part 2
Part 3
Part 4
Part 5
Chapter 3 Offense and Defense Between Mythologies
Chapter 4 Mythology Abasement
Part 1
Part 2
Part 3
Part 4
Epilogue Floating
Part 1
Part 2
Part 3
Afterword
Translator's Notes & References

魔技科の剣士と召喚魔王（ヴァシレウス）

11

三原みつき

Illustration:CHuN
(Friendly Land)

エントリーナンバー一番、モストデンジャラスコンビ！今から最高学年として場を盛り上げるために、漫才をやりますっ☆
香月花音
Kouzuki Kanon
ちょ……何の準備もなく思いつきで何言ってるの!?
八雲茜
Yagumo Akane

……戦って
力を示せと？
林崎一樹
Hayashizaki Kazuki
ええ。
そうですね。
ロスヴィータ・
レーゼドラマ
Hrotsvit Lesedrama

メディスン
ホイール
Medicine Wheel
アメリカ南側、
インディアン神話と契約する王

クラーク・ムーア
Clark Moore
アメリカ北側、
アメリカンジャスティス神話と
契約する王
Clark Moore

Chapter 1 – Long Stagnation and Harem’s Everyday

Part 1

"Hikaru-senpai's condition looks odd?"

When Kazuki asked back, Mio nodded repeatedly with a serious face.

"In the first place Hikaru-senpai is a lovely person that is a little strange right?"

If it was within some certain degree, even the odd side of her also felt charming.

"That's true but, she looks odd even more than usual right now."

Kazuki puckered his face wondering whether Hikaru-senpai finally did something as odd as running around fully naked.

"You are saying odd, odd how? If you don't say the specific, my imagination is just freely spreading wild that I get scared here. After all, it's not strange for her to do something…"

"So, sorry. By the way, right now what kind of thing are you imagining right now?"

"Sticking dog's poop on the end of a tree's branch at a public garden, and then chasing around Kaguya-senpai with it or…"

"Uwah, she might do that… however it's not something like that! Hikaru-senpai, she looks like she got addicted to shopping in this place see. She spent her whole day in Las Vegas strip.

"Shopping addiction?" Kazuki thought anticlimactically.

"Certainly it's not something that seems like Hikaru-senpai, however, that's not something really strange, right?"

Hikaru-senpai became a billionaire in Las Vegas' casino.

Mio's expression clouded saying "But…" as if there was some problem with that.

—Kazuki and co. were made to resume their [Las Vegas' everyday].

When Kazuki and co. visited [the land that was once called USA], there the country was broken up into north and south, and the [South-North War] was happening. In the north there was [American Justice Mythology], in the south there was [Indian Mythology], each side persisted in their own faith and rejected each other.

Kazuki carried his feet to each camp and investigated the situation.

And then he decided to lend a hand to North America that was not tinted with the color of a religious country and was a fellow civilized society with Japan. The North America should be a country that could have a mutual understanding with Japan.

But—only the inhuman slavery that North America was carrying out in their adoption of [extreme capitalism] he couldn't agree with.

American Justice Mythology had the nature where their power grew the more wealth and riches they had by developing the city. For that cause, North America rationally developed a slavery society to an inhuman degree.

While bringing victory to North America, he would also bring down the King of this country.

While secretly harboring that kind of rebellion spirit—Kazuki once again returned back to Las Vegas where he arrived the first time. Currently he was staying at the reserved floor of [Hotel Yggdrasil] and waiting for the time where he would meet the King face to face. But even though he had already sounded the King out for a meeting through Ginny and Mary, it was fairly hard to come true and he was forced to spend days in impatience.

When Kazuki was doing muscle training in his room after the lunch was over, Mio came over.

The track suited Kazuki stopped his push-up and stood up, he once again faced Mio.

"…Today too it seems she went to buy western clothes. She had done that all the time these three days."

"I didn't know at all that she did something like going out for shopping. Even though it would be fine if she just gave me a call."

Kazuki felt distant feeling inside his heart and grumbled. No matter where they went at this vast Las Vegas strip, this was a place where everywhere could become a date spot.

"I think she is planning to shop secretly from Kazuki, and when she manages to [transform] satisfactorily, she is going to announce it then."

Mio's words made Kazuki's chest beat a little faster.

"Hee, isn't that fine? Something like that honestly makes me get thrilled you know."

"But, she is running wild see." Mio shook her head repeatedly left and right.

"You see, just now I went to see her room's condition, but there were only strange clothing scattered all over her room… Somehow… it seems that Hikaru-senpai is shopping in a way that relied heavily on the brand."

"Brand reliance? So she is choosing not by looking at the content but only by the brand?"

"Yes. Something like that won't go well. American's clothing right now is hard to wear stylishly even at the best of time. After all their culture with Japan has been separated in these 15 years."

Now that she said it, Kazuki too was holding a little curious out of place feeling seeing the appearance of the people on the street when he was walking around America's city.

Even the familiar casual fashion like shirt and parka looked strange in its collar and hood's shape with psychedelic coloring. Rather than calling those as fresh style, it looked more like his emotion just didn't mesh well with it somehow and he saw the style as foreign.

On the other side, the American people might also look strangely at Kazuki and co.'s uniform and plain clothes…

"Now that you mention it, this means that Mio was entering Hikaru-senpai's room and performed belonging inspection as you pleased yourself?"

"I saw her by chance going back to the hotel bringing a lot of shopping bag, it completely got on my mind then…"

It was not a story that he could really praise her for, but it was because Mio understood that the clothing of America was hard to understand for Japanese people's sensitivity that she was bothered like this.

"But is the clothing really that hard to wear?"

"Because, on top of various gaps between our country's sense, the physique between Japanese and American are different right? Hikaru-senpai had long and slim legs and her body style is great, but compared to American people, her shoulder width or her bone structure are dainty. It's fine if you have it custom made because you have money, but perhaps because Hikaru-senpai is impatient, the clothes that she bought are all absurdly American sized."

"On top of the design being a little strange, the size is also mismatched?"

"In addition perhaps because she bought the clothes only looking at the price, there are only items that smacks of old lady. After all, the item in the high price range area is mainly demanded and aimed at those madams."

According to Mio, design, size, age bracket, Hikaru-senpai had mistaken all of that in her choice of item.

…Kazuki had also become anxious after hearing Mio say that much. Kazuki too was by no means really that knowledgeable in fashion, so he couldn't just consider the [embarrassment from failure] as other people's problem unrelated to him.

This story seemed to be a carefree topic in this current situation where there was a South-North War in America, but if something happened to Hikaru-senpai then this was an important matter. After all, he also loved Hikaru-senpai.

"In addition, Hikaru-senpai also bought a lot of cosmetics."

Mio said that as if giving him a finishing blow.

"Isn't it fine if it's cosmetics? …Someone like Mio, you are not wearing a lot of cosmetics huh?"

"It's unnecessary for me. Though there are also times where I wear it a little."

An excellent female magician constantly maintained the cleanliness of body using advanced magic power manipulation. Mio produced the ideal environment for skin using magic, making her skin everywhere smooth and silky.

It was not only the surface of the skin. Even for Mio it was impossible to do something like consciously changing her bone structure using magic but… unconscious desire like [I want to look like this] produced feeble magic power that during a long period would gradually turn someone's looks nearing that imagination, such thing was possible. Magic power was a power that warped the reality and realized the user’s wish.

In reality, in the generation of the adults when they were having a talk, they would say that the level of the looks of the recent youngsters was above compared to the old times. In other words, the height of magic power and outer look were really proportional to each other.

In Japan, Kazuki was surrounded by magician girls of the highest class, but while each one of them had their own characteristics, it was not a coincidence that all of them were a cute person that couldn’t be criticized at all… perhaps.

Kazuki unintentionally stared at Mio fixedly. Big and beautiful enticing eyes that made a person feel her strong will were Mio’s individual characteristic. Her beautifully growing eyelashes strongly emphasized her eyes like a frame. They looked well-ordered with its long growth. …Just as she said, he really didn’t feel that she needed any cosmetics at all.

Mio who was stared fixedly by Kazuki seemed to think of something, she closed her eyes and pushed out her lips to him with “Nn~”. Toward this ideal beautiful girl, Kazuki lightly kissed her lips.

“Something like cosmetics is used after our magic power grows weak.”

Mio said so as the representative of those who stood in the position of present era magician.

“But senpai… she doesn’t have confidence in herself.”

“Perhaps that’s why she got her hand on high class cosmetics. But Hikaru-senpai shouldn’t even have any experience in wearing cosmetics… putting cosmetic on a [beauty’s feature] even further despite already being a beauty herself is only going to add more hackney. It’s just like too much of a good thing is not actually good. Though I haven’t actually seen the end result…”

Mio lowered her voices that made Kazuki tremble, imagining what she said.

“…If it keeps like this, Hikaru-senpai might present an unbelievable transformation to Kazuki you know.”

Kazuki vividly imagined it, Hikaru-senpai in unbelievably thick cosmetic, wearing design like an alien or time traveler, with her body dressed in a dress intended for a madam that was sized strangely plump.

And she transformed into that appearance because she wanted to be praised by Kazuki.

It was heartbreaking. He immediately became really bothered how to react when he imagined it. At the very least it was great that he could prepare his heart beforehand like this.

“Even though it would be fine if she just consults with me if it’s about shopping for western clothes…”

Mio pouted her lips. She was purely loving fashion without any disagreeableness. There were also a lot of times where she sewed her own clothes, she had also the point of view that was near that of a creator. Usually, she was sorely tempted to advise her comrades that were ignorant of fashion like Kazuki or Koyuki or Hikaru-senpai.

“Isn’t it fine to point out what we were talking about just now to the person herself?”

“A junior couldn’t possibly say something like that to her senior… It’s a different matter if the person herself is the one that comes to us looking for advice.”

Mio was exactly disgruntled of that aspect. Surely she wanted that there was no such fence of a senior and a junior between them. However, Hikaru-senpai was not trying to rely on Mio and acted alone.

“That’s why Kazuki has to say it to her.”

“I am also a junior here.”

“It’s completely different having something like this said by a younger same sex and having it said by the boy she loved.”

In other words… even Hikaru-senpai secretly had an [inferiority complex and rivalry towards the stylish junior] in her heart.

In a glance that person seemed like a carefree person that didn’t think of anything, but when she was showing her laugh “Ahaha”, various feelings were piling up behind that smiling face. Even while the person herself was not aware of it.

Recently she stopped being a made-up character of [everyone’s prince] and grew into [Kazuki’s woman], she made merry as she pleased without reservation, however deep inside she was still being reserved of something. Perhaps she strangely liked her anal to be played with because she was still piling up and harboring something inside her.

No, as expected something like that was unrelated with this. Anyway, first lets search for Hikaru-senpai.

“…But before you go to Hikaru-senpai’s place-“

Mio once again closed her eyes and directed her lips to Kazuki adorably. This time he kissed her even longer than the one before as if tasting her. After separating their lips, Kazuki pointed out while being half amazed and half embarrassed.

“Even so, can Mio meddle in other people’s fashion despite how your appearance is like this?”

“Ultimately fashionable is just one’s own self-satisfaction! What makes Kazu-nii happy in the end is this kind of appearance-. Nyaa—!”

It couldn’t be helped that it was on his mind since quiet a while ago, but Mio’s body was wrapped in the bunny suit that she borrowed from Las Vegas’ hotel.

Furthermore what she wore was not like the bunny suit that she wore before, a [demonic remodeling] was performed on the outfit by Mio’s hands.

“Nyaa—” On the head of Mio that was cunningly tilting her head while meowing, was not rabbit ears but cat ears shaking on her head. Even her butt had a long tail that was swaying from Pyschokinesis. To use magic for something like that, this elite was truly an idiot.

It was not a bunny suit, it was a cat suit.

“Kazu-nii’s beloved cat is not Kanae-san, it’s me-! Goronyaa—!”

“Eh, you are making something like this from rivalry in that kind of aspect!?”

Just why in the world were his childhood friend and little sister assuming the role of cat characters?

Even while thinking that it was stupid, Kazuki didn’t avert his eyes from Mio’s cat suit. In actuality the suit tickled Kazuki’s male heart. Gulping his saliva, he couldn’t tear his eyes from the sight. As if to answer that gaze, Mio joined her hand behind her back and curved her breasts. It was a plan that presented both breasts to Kazuki.

“Fufufu, it’s okay to touch if you want to touch you know?”

Mio lasciviously giggled and shook her body, toying around with Kazuki’s sight.

As if being sucked, Kazuki’s both palms were enveloping the bulge of the breasts. They were soft and elastic. The cloth of the suit was thin, he could even feel the nipple that began to swell pointedly.

With a ‘hah’ Kazuki came to his senses. The common bunny suit had wire going through it in order to compensate the body shape and support the breasts. Because of that it should feel hard when it was touched. But those wires were taken out from this cat suit. In exchange the cloth of the suit itself shrank strongly in certain spots, stretched flexibly in certain spots, such expansion and contraction were the one that was supporting the body and breasts of the one wearing it. Furthermore this cloth that felt like rubber was extremely thin and faint, it was emitting glossiness like being wet while making the color of the skin seem transparent.

It was a material made from alchemy that was really advanced. Being fastened by this specially made suit, Mio’s body looked long and slender while her flesh was stretched voluptuously.

The suit compressed the breasts, magnifying its tension and resilience. There was a different sensuality when he touched it directly with his raw hand. Kazuki became dazed and kept rubbing the breasts.

While Kazuki became engrossed with his rubbing, Mio raised up Kazuki’s face with her hand. After staring at Kazuki affectionately with a composed expression, she brought her face closer.

This time the kiss came from Mio. ‘Chuu—’ She sucked and split open Kazuki’s lips, a tongue slipperily slid into Kazuki’s mouth.

Kazuki continued rubbing the breasts while answering the deep kiss. As if wanting their bodies and hearts to become one, their tongues entangled with each other stickily. ‘tsuu-‘ When their lips separated with a string of saliva drawn between them, Mio leaked out a hot breath and “Fufu~n” acted triumphant.

Kazuki pinched up Mio’s nipple. It made Mio’s body twitch and tremble.

"Nn-! …Kazu-nii you pervert. Fufu-, I am not an improper girl so I'm satisfied with just a kiss, but if Kazu-nii wants to do something indecent to me, it's fine for you to do as you please okay♪"

She was saying it in a way that, what happened from here on, everything would be according to Kazuki's will in the end.

The beautiful girl of orthodox school Amasaki Mio-san wouldn't ask for lewd things from herself.

Kazuki yielded to that obediently.

Finally he separated his hands from the breasts and this time he circled his hands on Mio's back. Stroking her smooth back, stroking her small waist, and then his hands went to touch her butt.

The high leg that was really tightly dug into Mio's butt, making her butt feel really plump. Thanks to the suit, the feeling of the flesh didn't lose even compared to Kaguya-senpai's butt.

Kazuki bent his hips while enjoying the butt with both his hands and buried his face into the valley of Mio's breasts.

It was a posture where he enjoyed rubbing both the breasts and butt.

"Ehehe, Kazu-nii looks like a kid♪"

Stroking the head of Kazuki that was buried into her breasts, Mio was looking below at him satisfiedly.

His posture looked like he was completely doting to a girl, but because the partner was Mio it didn't bother him at all.

…The palm should be the sharpest sensing organ of the human body. But compared to rubbing the breasts with both his hands, the sensation of burying his head into breasts was far more satisfying, why in the world was that?

When he took a deep breath while burying his head into the breasts, a sweet aroma filled his nose.

"Kazu-nii you pervert…♪" Mio chuckled lowly.

He was not deliberately being perverted, it was because he liked Mio that this sensation and this aroma could charm him until this far, that was the excuse that Kazuki made inside his heart.

By no means that it would be fine for him doing this with anyone. Kazuki pushed down Mio on the bed unable to endure himself.

Both of their bodies lied on top of each other while being entangled.

Mio meowed "Nyaa♪" on top of the bed, in a flash she separated from Kazuki trying to escape.

In front of Kazuki who was trying to chase and catch her, Mio's body twirled and she got on all four with her back turned on Kazuki. Her butt was elevated high in front of Kazuki. The suit dug even further into Mio's crotch and butt, turning mostly into a T-back shape.

"Here, it's fine to touch this place more…♡"

It was not me that wanted to get touched, but if Kazuki wanted to touch then.

To the end Mio was trying to incite Kazuki's will. She repeated the devil's temptation. With an expression that was full of confidence, she shook her lewd butt at Kazuki's nose tip repeatedly.

Kazuki yielded against that temptation. Or rather than saying that, he got carried away by the mood.

There was particularly no meaning at all to make any resistance.

First Kazuki turned his sight at the legs of Mio who was on all four.

Leg fetish… there was such a slang word. Kazuki didn't have any intention to have such fetish but, the delicate legs that bent back and forth on top of the bed were beautifully gorgeous. Due to the fishnet stocking, Mio's legs looked even tighter and delicate than they ordinarily do. It was by no means an insipid thinness like a pole, the sensuality of a girl was flooding out from between the stitch of the net, it was a thinness that was combined with lascivious softness.

Even while depicting an artistic line, the legs were lewdly voluptuous. They were beautiful legs that combined exactly both angel and devil's charm.

Kazuki was awakened to [Fishnet stocking is really great huh…].

At the gap a little inside the thigh, Kazuki buried his face into that fascinating gap, he rubbed his cheeks up and down as if grappling at it. His face was sandwiched between the expected softness.

He became excited with just that, but Mio's breathing also became rough.

The sound of breathing 'haa haa' from both of them resounded inside the quiet room. Kazuki was not touching directly at Mio's bare skin—there were still the cat suit and fishnet stocking separating their skin—both of them heightened the other's respective feelings.

"Haa haa… it's fine to touch as you please but, you must now take off the suit okay…"

Mio proclaimed with a bewitching voice.

"I cannot touch directly?"

"Because Kazuki, you are going to Hikaru-senpai's place after this…"

It didn't become a good reason but somehow the feeling was transmitted to him.

Kazuki raised his face from the thigh that he had tasted amply and then he thrust his nose into the chasm of Mio's big butt. He enjoyed the voluptuous butt that was shaped T-back with his face.

That valley was a little moist with sweat, a sweet aroma was drifting.

It was the smell of Mio's body. Body odor—even if he called it that but there was no [stink] at all. Mio shook off the body's filth using Extra Sense and Psychokinesis and constantly maintained her sanitary.

But if she perfectly kept her body clean, wouldn't the aroma of the body itself should be completely vanished then?

That such thing didn't happen was surely because she had sorted the pheromones that charmed the male from the filth and properly left them behind.

In other words this aroma he smelled was the girl’s pheromone that had been compressed purely, an aroma that was like the sweetness of honey. The slight odor of the sweat was added to that aroma as spice.

The hidden hard work of girl was reaching even as far as this kind of place. It was only for the sake of tempting man. No, Mio already didn’t have any eye towards other men anymore. This was only for the sake of tempting Kazuki, that she went until this far. It couldn’t be helped that Kazuki became this dazed.

When he poked the tip of his nose repeatedly on the area where the hole of Mio’s butt was located, Mio went “Kazu-nii-“ while raising a voice to restrain him. Different from Hikaru-senpai, as expected Mio was embarrassed of that spot.

His face that was pressed on Mio kept digging into her flesh like that while descending down the valley of her butt.

Something diamond shaped was pushing out on the butt and thigh, the spot that should be called as the center part of a girl was swelling out puffedly. There the suit was digging into it and a vertical line was running on the suit.

That wedged spot was moistly wet. The sweet aroma was carrying sourness that turned stronger. Just like a fruit that had ripened. The wet black cloth made the thin skin color look transparent.

For a while Kazuki pushed his face there and stared hard. Kazuki didn’t move at all but just with that Mio’s breathing turned rough and excited. That place was shaking up and down from her breathing. No, Mio was the one that viscously moved her whole hips up and down tremblingly with her own will. It was as if she was going to graze that spot on Kazuki’s face, as if it was coaxing that it wanted to get stimulated quickly. As if to answer that, Kazuki strongly pushed his face there.

“…-♡”

Something that was not like a voice leaked out from Mio’s mouth, Mio’s knees that was supporting her raised high butt were shaking.

When the tip of the nose strongly grinded against there, Mio’s sensitive spot there became even more drenched incessantly. “–!” As if to endure from raising an improper voice, Mio buried her head into the bed sheet. It was not the tempted Kazuki, but instead the tempting Mio that fell into the abyss of pleasure.

It was only Kazuki’s feeling that became highly strung. His flesh desire was left behind. But Kazuki concentrated on only pleasuring Mio. He grazed at there with his whole face and pushed out his nose. He pushed open that spot behind the suit and licked with his tongue up and down at the inside where he could see slight pink from the transparent cloth.

Mio was enduring to not raise a strong voice, but a swarm of small heart marks came flying at him. That minute change of positivity level was the proof of her joy. Even though he was doing this from across the cat suit, it didn’t need a long time.

Finally unable to bear it, Mio was raising her voice.

“…I, it feels good!!♡ No more, the lewd place feels good from Kazu-nii’s face!!♡”

While trembling violently, the pleasure that reached an extreme at Mio’s lower body gushed out with a spurt. A splash hit Kazuki’s face. With that as the last, strength went out from Mio’s both legs, her sweaty lower body was trembling in shivers as if it got numbed while her body sank into the bed.

Kazuki felt a fierce desire of wanting to take off the cat suit, but he held it down.

Mio had already reached climax in both her body and heart and got satisfied, but even though Kazuki’s feeling had surely got satisfied, his flesh was not fulfilled. A vortex of impulse was welling up inside him.

But Kazuki resigned himself and accepted what he already got before lying down beside Mio, he strongly hugged the girl who was breathing roughly.

“…Kazu-nii, you are making that kind of forced face with your all… that’s because you love me♪”

Mio giggled ‘ehehe’. “Yes. I love Mio.” Kazuki surrendered to her obediently.

However, “But…” he added on his words.

“You also love Hikaru-senpai right? Ehehe, I understand that. Have a safe trip.”

“Thank you.”

With their feelings having become one, Kazuki raised his body, he turned his rampaging desire all into a love towards Mio. “Goronyaa~♪” he hugged the cat suit Mio tightly that came spoiledly at him and Kazuki kissed her once more.

Part 2

After a brief period of pillow talk, Kazuki changed his clothes to his uniform in his search of Hikaru-senpai and rushed out from the hotel.

The presence of Hikaru-senpai was faint.

Following his bonds with everyone, Kazuki was able to sense their whereabouts.

But at the time when the side of the girl didn't wish for that, that presence he could detect became faint.

In other words Hikaru-senpai right now was thinking that she didn't want her presence to be felt by Kazuki.

Just as Mio deduced, Hikaru-senpai was shopping secretly where she wanted to [transform].

Having said that there was doubt and helplessness inside her chest. She also had the feeling of looking for help.

That was why, he was able to faintly sense the general location of Hikaru-senpai—in the south.

Las Vegas was an artificial city that was covered with a gigantic dome.

Though even calling it a dome, the ceiling was absurdly high, every single building here were all American-sized huge.

Due to the perfect environmental control, refreshing wind was blowing around and there was almost no change between outdoor and indoor.

The surrounding of [Hotel Yggdrasil] where Kazuki was staying, a townscape in the style of Northern Europe was spreading out. Colorful buildings that expressed the culture of Sweden and Denmark were lining up, a stupidly huge building that imitated a Viking ship was stretching out.

Las Vegas was divided into several districts where each one was centered on a hotel that adopted a specific theme, the appearance of the landscape in that district was matched with the theme.

For example the landscape around the hotel in pyramid shape was built in Egypt-style, and then the surrounding of the Oosaka castle hotel had ninja and samurai strutting around.

It was as if a lot of amusement parks without any sense of unity among them were crammed full into the dome forming the city. The American people that passed him by were all having a dazzling smile that he couldn't see in Japan—the Las Vegas smile was floating on their faces.

Hikaru-senpai's presence was in the south—he felt it from the zone that was united in Italian style. The center of the zone was the [Venetian Resort

Hotel] that had continued from the old era, a prominent well-established hotel.

The instant he entered the Italia zone, the artificial sunlight became stronger. The change of district even went as far as the season. The people walking down the road were wearing Italian fashion that was dandy looking. For example refreshing blue shirt with beige slacks—Marrone e Azzurro.[1]

The city of water [Venetia] was reproduced here and a water canal was stretched around.

The water canal was operating fully automatic gondola but Kazuki was running with his own feet.

He advanced through the undulating stone paving road toward the general direction of Hikaru-senpai.

The street had raising and descending stairs, joined complicatedly like a labyrinth. Reacting toward the presence of the running Kazuki, here and there at the roadside there were mechanical puppets standing up and performed sailor song while Kazuki passed through. There were a lot of gimmicks like this set up at the street corners of Las Vegas.

There was no doubt that it would be fun if he went around together with Hikaru-senpai just the two of them here.

Kazuki rushed out to the main street. Shops of fashion brands and sweets were lining up, many people were happily shopping there.

Inside that hustle and bustle—Hikaru-senpai was standing out.

The moment her figure entered his eyes, Kazuki thought ‘uwaa-‘ and stood stock still.

Senpai who was in the middle of shopping was also in her academy uniform. Behind her, the figures of five hotel men in black suit were following her holding mountains of paper bags.

It was as if a noble was taking along his attendants around. However in any case Hikaru-senpai had earned several dozen hundred million from the casino, and because she was [the first and probably the last unprecedented guest of honor] that had to try to use up all that money during her stay in America, it was perhaps only natural that those hotel men gathered around her on their own will.

The Las Vegas’s hotel men were talking a lot in passionate servicing spirit, but they didn’t give even a single intruding word. They didn’t even interfere on Hikaru-senpai’s strange shopping and only seemed to carry her luggage with wide friendly grins.

Hikaru-senpai also noticed Kazuki and raised her voice “Kazuki-!?”

And then as if she was getting caught doing a mischief, her gaze wandered around with an awkward face,

At first Kazuki was lost on what he should say and he stayed quiet.

“Fufufu…” Hikaru-senpai laughed daringly.

“Fu-fu-fu! I was thinking of getting reborn as a stylish girl in American Style in secret from Kazuki, but I never thought that it would be Kazuki himself that would search and come looking for me!”

Hikaru-senpai's atmosphere became somewhat desperate before taking the transforming pose of a famous hero.

"Then… even though I still have no confidence and I think it's still too premature but… right here, right now, I'm going to transform!! Yosh, just wait a second-"

Hikaru-senpai grasped the paper bags from the hotel men and she quickly turned to reverse direction rushing into the dressing room that was beside her. In Las Vegas' shopping mall, dressing rooms for the sake of enabling people to change into the bought clothing immediately could be found scattered here and there.

With the feeling of getting beaten to the punch, Kazuki could only stay quiet looking at the closed door.

Damn it, senpai was going to completely transform. He couldn't stop her. No, no matter what he was going to say, he had to say it only after ascertaining Hikaru-senpai's transformation with his own eyes. The fashion advanced practitioner Mio was saying things like that, but perhaps it wouldn't be that bad in reality.

Kazuki gulped his saliva audibly and watched over the dressing room that was producing rustling sounds, as if watching a chrysalis just before its hatching.

Even the hotel men that were carrying the luggage for some reason were also watching over the situation while gulping their saliva audibly.

'Why the hell are you guys also getting nervous', Kazuki's anxiety was increasing. Those people were the people that had been watching over Hikaru-senpai's shopping wordlessly. For them to be feeling nervous meant…

The sounds behind the door were ceased. It seemed the clothe changing was over. However the door was still not opened. Most likely she was also putting up cosmetics. If he believed of what Mio said, then this was a dangerous flag.

Finally the door opened while making a creaking sound.

"Ja, jaa~nn-☆" along with a forced cheerful voice while being a little nervous, the evolved Hikaru-senpai leaped out outside.

Kazuki involuntarily got taken aback.

Hikaru-senpai had her eyes shining sparklingly with the expectation of getting praised by Kazuki. But, the only thing that could be called as the usual Hikaru-senpai was only those eyes. The eyelashes that surrounded those eyes were hanging down lengthily as if they were carnivorous plants due to wearing alchemic mascara. Her skin was pure white from being besmeared heavily with face powder, only her eyelids' eyeshadow and her cheeks' cheek rouge were red like homely woman. Her lips were like a cod roe. For her to so skillfully destruct her raw material as a beautiful girl until this far….

Even if he understated himself, he could only say that the garments were like an alien.

To interpret that appearance as a fashion, was something that Kazuki’s brain refused to do.

First he couldn’t comprehend it at the point of having her whole body wrapped in [silver clothes]. Wire went through that silver tunic like a princess’s skirt, taking the form of a perfect circle silhouette. From there a silver hakama-like trouser that went beyond wide was stretching out. There was no other clothing coordination that could ruin Hikaru-senpai’s great style as much as this.

At her feet were boots that were wrapped in belt that was attached with rivets, it gave off the impression of heavy rock but made the sense of unity of the outfits to become astray. Moreover she was putting on a hat that looked like poop.

‘How could this kind of thing happen’…Kazuki felt dizzy

But on the other hand there was also part that could be understood. Hikaru-senpai was a person that took impact relatively seriously.

Perhaps they were making a misunderstanding that it was some kind of show, the passing American peoples around were clapping and cheering.

“How is it!?”

“There is nothing good about it!” Kazuki answered with a feeling as if he wanted to overturn a table upside down.[2]

Hikaru-senpai raised her voice “Ee—” with her only single remaining cute point that was her eyes turning round.

“Can I speak, senpai? Please calm down and listen.”

Kazuki grasped her both hands that were covered with queer yellow mittens lined up with suction pads.

‘Uuu… these mittens feel slimy…’

“Senpai is a beautiful girl. Yet if you wear a jumbled outfit like this, it will only ruin the great points of your precious raw material.”

“Bu, but isn’t this good clothes? It’s interesting see.”

“Rather than calling it interesting, that hat that looks like soft cream, it actually looks like poop.”

“Of course I too bought this hat thinking it looks like poop. I’m thinking of putting this on and chasing around Kaguya with it.”

The sad thing was that Kazuki’s imagination was spot-on.

“It’s not the point of fashion to aim for something interesting. There is also no sense of unity in the coordination…”

Kazuki also loved Hikaru-senpai’s playfulness but, it was no one else but Hikaru-senpai herself who thought that it was not enough with only that. He mustn’t let her throw away the path towards the orthodox school beautiful girl.

“But but, this clothes is from an amazing brand you know? Moreover I heard that it was actually used in a fashion show or something… they said it originally wasn’t for sale!”

Kazuki admonished senpai using his second-hand knowledge taught from Mio.

That was nothing more than a dependence toward the authority.

“Senpai, clothes that are worn in fashion show is not made intended for everyday life. It’s clothes worn for a show. The idea and theme of the design is for entertainment that expressed humor impressively, possibly artistically. If I have to say it, it’s similar with a clown costume, it’s not something to wear in everyday life that can show Hikaru-senpai’s charm.”

However, what in the world the designer who made that poop-like hat wanted to express…

“…I, is that so. Even though I planned to become cutting-edge because in the first plan Mio-chan too is an amateur…”

Having realized that she had magnificently lost face due to ignorance, light disappeared from Hikaru-senpai’s eyes.

"No but, I myself plan to choose clothes that I thought looked good thinking that something like brand is irrelevant yet… I thought that clothes like this show individuality or something…"

Trying to varnish over her mistake, Hikaru-senpai mumblingly continued her words.

No way, no one was supposed to become like this because she herself wanted it.

When senpai came to the store she didn't understand what would be good to choose in the store of foreign culture, she felt lost, then in the end she escaped by aiming for laughs putting importance on brand's influence and impact, there was no mistake that that was what happened.

"Senpai completely become ungirly like this you know."

When Kazuki said that, Hikaru-senpai's face tone became completely white like paper in a flash, as if to run away she rushed inside the dressing room. Kazuki immediately caught her back.

When he embraced her closely in the bulging clothes that looked like a clown, it felt like he could feel the anxiety that was hidden inside Hikaru-senpai behind her brightness and humor from her thin back.

"Please don't think that senpai will lose face or anything."

Carefully as if treating a fragile article, Kazuki got closer to Hikaru-senpai's white nape that peeked out from the weird clothing and whispered.

"Let's do it over one more time, in a shopping date together with me."

When Hikaru-senpai nodded, one of the hotel men that was standing by on the side quickly presented a cleansing oil from inside the shopping bag.

Part 3

Kazuki remembered his conversation with Mio after he flirted with her in the cat suit and right before he went out to search for Hikaru-senpai—.

“First avoid clothes that have English word or patterns printed gaudily on it. Patterns need to be limited to only one or two on the whole body. Color too, it’s more comfortable to have less than three colors. It’s so that the clothes are not jumbled unskillfully.”

In the so called [pillow talk] scene, Mio squandered that chance for the sake of giving advice for Hikaru-senpai.

But Mio’s way of speaking was cheerful.

“Choose a size that’s just right for the body. Experienced practitioners wear various sizes on purpose to produce a sense of volume, but Hikaru-senpai had a great style so it’s fine to not do any awkward scheme. Surely Hikaru-senpai will say that its unsatisfactory, but rather than using impact from things separately, give more stress to the size impression and the whole body’s atmosphere.”

If he did that then he wouldn’t fail even if he was choosing from American clothes, was what Mio said.

“Males tends to shift their focus on the detail of items separately but…”

“Hikaru-senpai is also a girl but, senpai is that kind of type huh.”

“Clothes that are only fully fixated to individuality are hard to coordinate skillfully. First maintain the image of the whole clothing coordination, and then buy the clothes as parts of the components. Even if there is item that seems really attractive, buying items that don’t match the image is only pointlessly spending money.”

This is an act that was the exact opposite of blindly lining up for high class items.

“What is important is the sense of unity, in other words from understanding every single items [symbolic nuance], combining them skillfully will produce the complete form.”

“Combining the symbolic nuance?”

“For example ordinary clothes like denim that is casual and don’t put on airs, while collared shirts are clothes that is more formal compared to T-shirts and close to a dress, something like that. Understand that every single piece of clothing has a different role.”

“Aah, if it’s that then even I can somehow understand. Those are clothes that even menswear have.”

“The fundamental is that silky smooth material is elegant, while rough and gritty material is casual. For example if the knit is finely knitted then it’s dress-like, while something roughly knitted become casual. The variety is not limited to only two types of elegant and casual, there are more detailed [elements], like intentionally making an elegant impression of drape by putting a lot of space, or romantic impression from a sense of translucence showing the impression of chiffon that is fluffy…”

“Wait a second, you are talking in gibberish Japanese so please slow down.”

“If I have to make an example using anime, when you line up parts like [blond hair] or [twin tails] or [upturned eyes] then it you’ll give the feeling that [this girl is absolutely a tsundere!], like that. Such calculation is necessary.”

“If you said it like that it’s really easy to understand!”

“…Recently, aren’t we getting too poisoned by Lotte and Itsuki-chan I wonder…”

“But what you said just now feels completely like Mio herself isn’t it?”

“I’m not a tsundere at all! I have loved Kazu-nii since a long time ago!!”

As an experiment Kazuki tried to poke *tsun tsun* Mio’s oppai. “Ehehe~, it’s fine to touch more.” Saying that Mio came snuggling closer to him. Certainly she was being dere derelovestruck to him.[3]

“When talking about [The Noble of Wavy Fluffy Hair of Pink Color][4] it will remind you of a certain famous character that gives you the sense of what a tsundere is, but for people who don’t know about that famous character perhaps they won’t think that it’s tsundere. …With this kind of feeling each items’ nuance will be influenced by the watching person’s knowledge, there is also this kind of thing.”

“So history and convention will give birth to meaning for a symbol then.”

“When you know about the style of someone who is wearing button down shirt where its collar has button that comes with it, where the person buttoned up the collar’s button even though he is not wearing a necktie for the sake of dressing up stylishly, you will understand that it’s a shirt that has casual tendency, but for people that don’t know anything about it they will normally take it in as a dress shirt. Even that kind of trivial detail will heighten the degree of perfection when you pay attention to it.”

“It feels like that kind of symbolic thing, it’s not really essential isn’t it? Seems like just playing around with knowledge between fellow knowledgeable people…”

“That’s not true at all. Even though the people in our surrounding all have different standards but their attire are still following that rule, since our birth we have been surrounded all along by such rules and raised up according to it. The image that has been piled up since the distant ancient age has been imprinted into our sense. Isn’t that what we call a culture?”

Certainly a stylish person would look stylish even if the one who was seeing it was someone like Kazuki who didn’t really know about many details. But it was just that he was unable to expertly explain and mimic such thing. His sensitivity about such thing was shared with society through the same culture.

“It’s not an instinctual sense. But, by no means it’s a just an appearance without any substance. Don’t you think this is the same like how Mythology manifest their strength?”

“But that’s, as I thought, doesn’t that means that those who don’t have firm fashion knowledge won’t be able to produce a fashionable sense of unity?”

Because the person didn’t understand in detail that they couldn’t create a sense of unity.

That was why such a person would always be tormented by anxiety if maybe what they were wearing was mistaken and looked ugly.

Kazuki had gotten various things explained to him, but as expected he only got the conclusion that it was impossible for him, like re-tempering a dull sword. [5]

“I guess… that’s why while you’re not well informed don’t choose gaudy design as much as possible and also restrain the number of the colors like I said. If it’s Hikaru-senpai then I think she will be lovely enough with something simple.”

In the end he couldn’t reach any other conclusion except such a half-assed one like that.

Before this he had also done a shopping date with Hikaru-senpai once where they chose clothes using Hikaru-senpai as a dress-up doll. That time too they tried to make an ideal Hikaru-senpai based on their own special way, and they manage to become satisfied in that place, but there was a feeling remaining that it was still incomplete in some aspects somewhere. There was room for growth.

But he couldn’t even guess the tangible way of what should be done to resolve that incompleteness.

From Mio’s explanation just now, he could understand the reason why it seemed like something was insufficient. But in regards to that, piling up knowledge and experience was necessary, they were unable to transform into a stylish figure right now.

Even so, was there no image that could only be constructed by the current him and Hikaru-senpai at all…

The hotel men said that they would bring back the shopping bags to the Hotel Yggdrasil and removed themselves.

When he became alone just with Hikaru-senpai that had returned to her uniform appearance, they began the fresh start of the shopping. While going around the shops at the main street, Kazuki imparted the things he learned from Mio to Hikaru-senpai as it was.

“Kazuki, as I thought you came to me hearing the story from Mio-chan…?”

Kazuki didn’t tell Hikaru-senpai until that detail.

Hikaru-senpai who had sharp instinct immediately guessed and became completely disheartened dejectedly.

"Even though all will be fine if I rely on Mio-chan from the beginning… but I feel strangely mortified to do that… this feeling, it's a bad emotion isn't it… Like that in the end I troubled Kazuki instead… I, am a troublesome girl right…"

Hikaru-senpai who usually had a straightforward personality looked hesitant with completely dull eyes.

Rivalry, and an inferiority complex towards Mio—perhaps those emotions ought to be called as negative emotions.

But against such Hikaru-senpai, there was not even a little bit of any unpleasant feeling that welled up inside Kazuki.

"I like that social disposition of senpai itself, so I don't feel that it's troublesome or anything at all."

Before, Kaya had once said to Kazuki that [Ultimately people cannot understand each other] [That's why it's better to be alone] [Humans become strong from magic. That's why they become able to live in that kind of way]. Kazuki denied her. Those ideas were completely the opposite of Kazuki's thinking.

"If there are aspects where humans can sympathize with another human then there also places where humans are different from one another, doesn't that moderate roughness between us feel good? It's the end if we start talking like that conversation is troublesome."

Rough differences would create friction.

But, by personally experiencing each other's differences and coming into close contact against each other, it would make one feel a sense of unity instead.

Surely, a relationship between a man and a woman was that kind of thing.

For Kazuki who became fond of many girls at the same time, each of their differences was lovely no matter which one it was. If he started talking that it was troublesome, then the troublesomeness of the masochist attention seeker Koyuki or Kazuha-senpai who couldn't be honest were incomparable to Hikaru-senpai.

While talking about such conversation, Kazuki took a piece of clothing from the store counter. 'Let's go with this.'

Hikaru-senpai seeing it leaked out a surprised voice "Eh, that's…"

—When Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai finished shopping, they returned once again to the dressing room in order to immediately change. Hikaru-senpai wouldn't change by herself, she led Kazuki inside the changing room.

The dressing room was far spacious compared to the ones in Japan.

"Well then, with this I'm Kazuki's dress-up doll."

Hikaru-senpai proclaimed such and presented her body to Kazuki.

First Kazuki took off her uniform’s jacket. Hikaru-senpai’s blouse that was strained from her unexpectedly large breasts appeared, after he undressed those blouse and her skirt, next was her tidy white underwear that appeared. Hikaru-senpai was also skillful in close range combat, but she was really not that muscled, a body style that was long, slender, and well-proportioned.

“Kazuki, I also bought underwear you know…”

Hikaru-senpai pointed out while being bashful. In other words… Kazuki began to undress Hikaru-senpai from her underwear too.

After grasping around, he unfastened the bra’s hook. Before his eyes, Hikaru-senpai’s breasts gently entered his sight.

“Ahaha, Kazuki’s eyes are locked on my nipples.”

Hikaru-senpai laughed shyly. Kazuki took a deep breath and pulled himself together, and this time he pulled down Hikaru-senpai’s panty. It felt awkward to stare fixedly at that spot.

“Ahaha, the current me really feels like Kazuki’s doll…”

Hikaru-senpai turned stark naked, but she waved her hands up and down and murmured embarrassedly.

That truly beautiful figure was in Kazuki’s hands. He wanted to do whatever he pleased with that naked body—suppressing down such intense desire, Kazuki set his hand on the shopping bag.

Under a single concept, they had bought a lot of clothes.

First he held out yellow underwear to Hikaru-senpai. As if to say [put it on] Hikaru-senpai opened out both her legs and then raised up one of her legs. Kazuki crouched down in order to put on the panty on her. Even though he didn’t intend to look, he unconsciously kept stealing a glance above. That spot of Hikaru-senpai was looking slippery.

Then after putting on a bra of the same color with the panty, looking at the set of the top and bottom underwear Kazuki felt a mysterious sense of accomplishment.

“I have the feeling that senpai’s theme color is yellow.”

There was no deep thought in regards to this underwear. “It’s like the curry member isn’t it?” Hikaru-senpai made a bright grin.<ef>The curry might be a reference to yellow ranger</ref>

More and more they chose and took out clothes from the bag. Putting her arm through the shirt’s sleeve, putting on the bottom, fastening the belt.

“This is…” Hikaru-senpai leaked out a voice of wonderment once again.

Kazuki further took out a thin jacket made from summer material, made Hikaru-senpai put her arm through the sleeve, and fastened a necktie tightly on the neck.

This time, everything that Kazuki chose and bought was all [boyish] thing, possibly even [mannish]. The clothes that were worn just now were all mannish things, but it could be also coordinated into boyish, there shouldn’t be anything out of place even if both styles were mixed.

What was called boyish was the cuteness of naughty boy that was incorporated into girl fashion. As for mannish it was the incorporation of the sex appeal and the coolness of adult man into girl fashion.

Both of them characterized the nuance of manliness. In other words Kazuki and also Hikaru-senpai once dressed herself up as a man in her casual clothes, both styles were coordination that was easy to comprehend.

If it was this then there shouldn't be any blunder that might happen. It was the only perfect solution.

To guess what kind of nuance the other women's clothing possessed was something hard to understand for Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai, but if it was only about boyish or mannish than they could understand with a single glance.

However what made Hikaru-senpai baffled was the thinking that if doing that meant [Aren't I just going back to before].

Kazuki gave the finishing touch by putting on pumps on Hikaru-senpai.

Although it could be said that there was a feeling of unity in the clothing coordination, just in one point there was what Mio said that it would be fine if they added [the left out item].

"Like this isn't there no difference at all with me in the past when I dressed like a man…"

Hikaru-senpai anxiously murmured like that before looking at the mirror.

And then, she opened her eyes.

Wrong. This was decisively different from dressing up like a man.

Cheap men's clothing was merely fabric that was sewed together to form cylinder silhouette. Compared to that, expensive lady's outfit matched their shape with the body line like the woman's breast or waist constriction or bottom and the likes, making three dimensional shape. When looking at the bottom, that three dimensional shape sewing technique could be easily witnessed. The line of the bottom was so beautiful it would make the watcher wanted to rub their cheek on it, while the cuff around the ankle tightly squeezed the foot making one really understood that it was not merely a simple cylinder shape.

The shirts and jacket were similar, even without exposing skin it would make one feel the eroticness.

The Hikaru-senpai that once dressed up as a man had all her feminine figure covered up by the wide silhouette of the man's clothing. But the mannish clothing that Kazuki put on Hikaru-senpai right now, while it gave off the vibe of manliness, till the end the clothes polished off that feminine silhouette.

Be that as it may this much beautiful silhouette couldn't be let out except by high class brand. Mass produced item were made for the sake of letting anyone no matter whom able to wear it. In contrast with that, high class brand was intended for extremely limited class, only producing few clothing that perfectly fitted the wearer.

Yet it was easy to move in regardless of how it perfectly fit the wearer, surely because the clothes were hand-tailored. By loosely sewing the parts that would tighten when the body moved, the clothes would be able to naturally stretch and contract.

As expected high class items were different, just as what Mio passionately talked about.

“Hikaru-senpai also has aspects where you seem boyish, however I think it doesn’t mean that those aspects will be a hindrance for your feminine charm. In the anime that we watch together with Lotte and Kamimura-san too, there are a lot of boyish girls that make their entrance.”

Of course it didn’t mean that cute fashion didn’t suit Hikaru-senpai, yet it was not necessary to purposefully reject her boyishness.

There was no need for her to hold any complex in the first place.

There was also cases where a girl that had a boyish atmosphere made her femininity become more distinct instead. Even if she wore cool and stylish outfits, that body figure of hers was delicate. It was calculated so that silhouette would appeal on that aspect. And then Hikaru-senpai’s face, whether her skin, her lips, her cheeks, and her face line too, all of those were sweetly feminine. It couldn’t be hidden.

It accented her coolness and her cuteness.

“Does senpai, hate this kind of appearance?”

“Well… certainly it’s different than the man getup I did in the past, I know that…”

Kazuki embraced from behind Hikaru-senpai who was standing in front of the mirror. She was so cute that it made him unintentionally want to do that.

“Is that so… I can see how it looks cool when I stay silent but, there is also a lot of cuteness too.”

Inside Kazuki’s arm, Hikaru-senpai’s white cheeks turned bright red.

When both of them exited the dressing room, there were the usual hotel men outside standing in a row waiting for them, making Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai become startled. When they saw Hikaru-senpai’s figure, they unanimously cheered “Bravo—!” and “So cute!” repeatedly, and for some reason they took out crackers and blew them merrily.

And then they took the new shopping bag of Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai and once again they said that they would bring it back to Hotel Yggdrasil before rushing away. Looking at the perfect service soul, Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai were stunned in mute amazement.

Part 4

The sun was setting in the artificial Venetia.

Although it was called a setting sun, it was just a made-up setting sun that was projected in the dome, but although it was just something made-up, the townscape was set to perfectly shine from that light source.

The canal throughout the downtown glistened in orange color. A more beautiful time visited the city of water.

Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai boarded an automatic gondola and were on their way back. Both of them had their bodies pressed against each other closely aboard the slightly big gondola and left their body to the tumble of the orange stream.

In place of the rower's nonexistence the gondola was operated by mechanical control and a recorded shanty was played.

Kazuki stared at the side face of Hikaru-senpai that was glowing from afterglow, he was once again pondering how could a person this beautiful still not have confidence in herself.

While he was by her side. …In other words he should think that the cause was in him.

He thought back upon his contact with Hikaru-senpai. …All this time since Hikaru-senpai became making merry as she pleases, perhaps he had relied too much on Hikaru-senpai's proactive approach.

All those times when both of them were ascertaining their relationship, he was always in the position as the receiver.

He couldn't keep on just going along with senpai. He must not just only retort on senpai's merry making act, he must get on fully on it too.

That was why senpai, wasn't she feeling anxious that her feeling to him was only one way traffic?

"The setting sun is beautiful isn't it?" Hikaru-senpai leaned on Kazuki teasingly.

"Hikaru-senpai is even more beautiful."

"Ahaha, Kazuki, you are saying something like from a manga."

So as not to be treated like joking, Kazuki embraced Hikaru-senpai close and forcefully stole her lips.

Hikaru-senpai showed a surprised look, but she immediately responded to Kazuki's kiss by entangling her tongue to his.

A flame burned inside Kazuki's chest. It was the yet untamed flame that was fueled half-bakedly by Mio.

Kazuki pushed down Hikaru-senpai to the wooden floor of the gondola. In order to make the automatic driving gondola safe there was a high fence built, that was why the floor of the gondola was the world of only the both of them. From the view point of the people coming and going through the road slightly separated from the canal, they couldn't peek at what Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai were doing.

Despite of that from the sounds of the hustle and bustle and the water stream nearby that reached their ear, until the very end they were still outdoors, that fact incited the feeling of liberation and immorality.

"This is because senpai is beautiful. Though recently, perhaps I didn't convey it to senpai properly."

Kazuki laid bare the jacket that he chose and put on Hikaru-senpai himself. Hikaru-senpai blinked her eyes in surprise against Kazuki's unusual proactive action.

Hikaru-senpai's shirt clung to her body line closely, while her necktie sank into her breast valley as if to emphasize it. Desire burn continuously inside Kazuki, but he didn't surrender himself to it.

"I, love senpai. Senpai has always be the proactive one that's why I ended up relying on that but… even I'm thinking that I want senpai. That's why, please have confidence."

"…I don't have anything like self-confidence you know."

Hikaru-senpai suddenly averted her sight from Kazuki and leaked out a dejected voice.

"Why is that?"

By any chance had he said a wrong guess, now he became uneasy.

"Because…"

Hikaru-senpai had her words cut off there, after holding back her heart—she said it.

"Because Kazuki, no matter how long I wait you never showed your penis for me-!!"

Kazuki was petrified. After a full dozens of seconds passed he finally managed to wring out his voice "…Eh?"

His thought came to a halt from the too unexpected remark.

"Since that time we said our love to each other, even though I have been continuously asking you to show me your penis all along, you have never show me your penis no matter how many times I asked! That's why… I thought that I'm not a woman worthy to be entrusted with penis…"

Entrusted with penis? What the hell is that.

Certainly at every opportunity Hikaru-senpai kept asking penis penis repeatedly.

"No, that's… it's going to be troubling if I just said 'aah geez I'll show it okay, I'll show it' or… it feels like presenting my body to a hungry beast or… there is not the right mood or something…"

The man Kazuki completely said something like mood.

"Aren't the reason you are unable to show your penis to me because you don't like me!?"

"It's the opposite! It's because I like senpai, that if I present something like my raging penis to senpai I won't be able to hold back anymore, that's why I keep enduring!"

"Kazuki's penis is raging you said!?" Hikaru-senpai's eyes shined.

"It's really raging crazily here! I'm at my limit already!"

"It's fine you know! I know that we can't make something like a kid… yet."

'Yet', when that word was said there was a painful ring to it.

Someday, if the day came when he was going to make this delicate body of Hikaru-senpai pregnant with his own child…

"If I heard something like Kazuki's penis is raging then I cannot hold myself back anymore here! My testicle sack is snapped!"

"The right word is patience isn't it!?"[6]

"Eee—ii!"

From Kazuki's posture that was pushing down Hikaru-senpai to the floor, Hikaru-senpai sprang up in order to reverse their position.

This time it was Kazuki who was the one that got pushed down—then his trousers and underpants got pulled down altogether smoothly.

"Waa…! This is a penis…! It's raging!!"

With sparkling eyes Hikaru-senpai raised her voice. The cool outdoor air and the texture of the gondola's wood could be directly felt by his exposed lower body. When his lower body got completely exposed, he felt it for real. Hikaru-senpai was staring at that fixedly without moving with rapt attention and a deep sigh. That deep sigh made Kazuki's tip feel ticklish.

With a rotation Hikaru-senpai exchanged the position of up and down where her feet and head alternated position with each other, now beside Kazuki's face there were knees straddling his head. And then Hikaru-senpai too stripped off her bottom altogether with her panty and threw it away.

"Kazuki… look, at my girly place…"

Between Hikaru-senpai's pure white thighs—at her plump and swelling crotch, there was a light pink incision running there. That part which looked like lips which he was given free rein to had already looked moist and glossy.

"Kazuki's thing here got even more raging when you saw mine! …You're getting excited, I'm happy…"

Kazuki's lower body stiffened rigidly. Hikaru-senpai raised a happy voice while, without any reserve or shyness, innocently, she rubbed her cheek on that.

At the same time at Kazuki's face, the wet crotch came pressing down. Kazuki's face got wet.

"Kazuki's here, looks like ice candy♪ Is it okay for me to lick it?"

Without waiting for the reply, *lick*, there was a velvety sensation that crawled through the surface of Kazuki's sensitive spot.

"I'll feel good too if something like this is done to me… it's fine isn't it…"

Hikaru-senpai lightly kissed there *chuu chuu* repeatedly, pushing with the tip of her tongue, licking, and finally she stuffed it inside her mouth, *chuuu—* sucking it. Hikaru-senpai narrowed her cheeks while making sucking sound. Her tongue and the inside part of her cheeks wrapped that from all directions. Keeping it like that she shook her neck and rubbed slipperily.

It was a stimulus that made his whole body numb.

Kazuki made his resistance and licked back at that spot of Hikaru-senpai in front of his eyes.

"…!♡"

Now that they were attacking each other, Kazuki was the one more skilled. Kazuki could grasp the detailed change of Hikaru-senpai's positivity level through the heart marks that came flying. From the change of the positivity level, where, how strong he needed to touch and in what kind of way to make it feel good, Kazuki soon grasped all the key points.

"Nn~!♡"

Hikaru-senpai that was straddling on top of Kazuki's face immediately trembled with her waist losing strength and shivering.

Even so Hikaru-senpai didn't stop stuffing her cheek. Rather she undauntedly kept sucking fiercely while shaking her head. Hikaru-senpai piled up saliva inside her mouth and made watery sounds.

It was a skill that couldn't be expected from someone's first time. Hikaru-senpai's instinct was sharp at anything, she was fast in improving herself.

Kazuki undauntedly inserted his index finger into the wet inside of Hikaru-senpai. At the same time he crawled his tongue on the puffed up swelling that was exposed on the external outer part. Based from Kazuki's experience, he knew that this spot was sensitive. Then with his left hand that was empty, he further stroked the butt hole that Hikaru-senpai loved.

Hikaru-senpai's waist twitched *bikun bikun* showing the sign of reaching her limit, her hips undulated in a big way.

Even so Hikaru-senpai was not stopping in her movement that was trying to grant pleasure on Kazuki.

Outdoor—they were outdoor, but the bottom of the gondola where nobody's eyes could cacth them had completely turned into an all-out war between male and female. Even while Kazuki and Hikaru-senpai sensed the city's presence nearby, they were getting absorbed in the animalistic pleasure.

"Kazuki's twitching looks like it's going to erupt. …It really looks like Mirage!"

There was a hotel in Las Vegas that had a famous show named The Mirage that showed the eruption of a volcano.

"Hikaru-senpai too, it looks completely like The Grand Canyon!"

On the other hand Kazuki felt something like Mother Nature.

The next instant, a cataclysm occurred. Kazuki’s volcano finally arrived on its endurance limit and erupted, Hikaru-senpai’s canyon too, an earthquake that she didn’t even know how many times it had come occurred like a tsunami that happened on the river at the bottom of the valley. Both of them lost their strength limply. Hikaru-senpai’s throat was, *gulp* made a sound.

“Haa haa… strange taste♪”

Hikaru-senpai half-turned her body in a roll and matched her body at Kazuki’s direction.

“Hehehe, I satisfied a boy as a girl… Though I was also made to feel really good a lot of times that I cannot count♡”

Hikaru-senpai laughed happily.

“I have seen Kazuki’s penis to my heart’s content, so it’s fine already to not dress myself stylishly anymore.”

“Eee-!?”

What was all he had done this whole day for then!?

“Ahaha, I’m joking. I’m going to do my best to become a girl that Kazuki can love earnestly. Ne, kiss me using a lot of tongue♪”

Kazuki hugged back Hikaru-senpai that lay on top of him, kissed her, and as she demanded he inserted his tongue into her lips. Hikaru-senpai’s tongue was viscously twining around his.

It was contact between tongues that had lovingly caressed each others’ important place just before this. While hugging each other, their naked lower bodies were glued to each other. Even now they were enduring the welling up urge and strength filled their hugging arms.

“I love you, senpai.”

“Ahaha, me too.”

Hikaru-senpai—150. The avatar of positivity level up flew at him, Hikaru-senpai’s positivity level had reached the Favored PrincessChouki level.

At that time the gondola shook strongly while a buzzer sound rang informing them that they had reached the destination.

“Ah, we arrived.”

Hikaru-senpai reflexively raised her waist. Kazuki stopped her in panic.

“Senpai, please stand up after putting on your panty!!”

“Thank you for today, Kazuki.”

At the occasion where they separated to go to their respective rooms, Hikaru-senpai went “Ah, that’s right”, and added more.

“Kaguya too seemed like her condition is a little strange, so take care of her.”

—About that, even without being told, Kazuki too had noticed it.

Part 5

Las Vegas was said to be the holy ground of [buffet], an all-you-can-eat restaurant. Inside famous hotels there would undoubtedly be a famous buffet anywhere. They had become a centerpiece comparable to the casinos and shows in Las Vegas.

Talking about all-you-can-eat, in Japan there were a lot of restaurants there where the ingredient’s quality was not really good, but Las Vegas’ buffet piled up high quality items drastically like a mountain. The Americans also ate unreservedly, like swallowing a mountain.

The portion was so hearty that looking at it would make one doubtful as to whether the restaurant was actually calculating the profit and loss.

The price was also fair. Most likely it had a strong publicity implication for the hotel to call out to the customer. Similar to how the hotel charges were also cheap, they had the objective of making the customer to drop all their money in the casino.

Of course the restaurants that were said to be top class didn’t take a buffet-style but a course-style, but Kazuki and the others naturally only brought their feet towards the buffet.

With a group this large would mean that their favorite food would differ from each other, that was why a buffet that included all kinds of genres was convenient and it was also easy to converse lively.

“Recently this kind of luxury has become ordinary, I have the feeling that our feelings have been paralyzed…”

“This one too… however this one’s reasoning is ringing out the warning bell that this is not normal that this one cannot compose oneself… Is this what people call something as dreamlike?”

The swordsman combi of Kazuha-senpai and Kohaku spoke in light tone while taking food on their plate.

“To say impudently it’s like we become particularly unloving towards the food of Japan, it feels terrifying like this isn’t it-… I wonder if it’s the pure difference of quality with the things that we usually eat…”

“The food in the Sword Division’s dormitory is like that after all… so this is what one means when they talk about dreamlike.”

“…Both of you, your movements will become bad if you grow fat you know.”

When Kazuki quietly approached them and gave a warning, both of them twitched and their spines shivered.

Although both of them were swordsman, in their root they were high school girls that were weak to temptation.

“As for Kanae, Kanae wants to eat Nii-sama’s cooking once in a while.” Kanae expressed.

“It seems that we can borrow the kitchen if we ask, should I cook sometimes?”

As for Kazuki in his own way it was a research being treated to delicious foreign cooking like this every day, sometimes he also conversed with the chef, he had the feeling of wanting to test out various things.

“In Japan this is called as viking[7], but that word is a completely Japanese made-up word from an English term and is not used at all in other countries, just so you know.”

Liz Liza-sensei said that with one of her hand holding a jockey that was filled plenty with milk.

The little teacher was always industriously wishing to properly grow more.

“Buffet comes from the French language, but even Englishman that hated France will call a buffet as buffet.” Arthur also interjected and participated in the conversation.

“Why is it called viking in Japan? Vikings were the pirates of northern Europe right?”

“Isn’t that because there is that kind of person that is the cause?”

Kazuki pointed at that person who was in a slightly separated spot from them.

“Fuhahahaha–!”

Beatrix was laughing while piling up everything that could be called meat on her plate.

That girl was always laughing whether it was in a fight or when eating huh… Was she also laughing when she was sleeping? Was everyone in the Norse Mythology like that?

“Beatrix, mind your manners okay.”

Kazuki only said that towards the woman… girl?… that seemed like she had somehow mistaken her own existence.

“Fuhahahaha, I know! I am a lady while also a warrior!”

[Roast beef is served—!], when the waitress raised her voice saying that in English, Beatrix went “Prey-!” and jumped towards the dish.

Beatrix lined up on the line in front of the waitress that was serving the roast beef and immediately hit it off with the American people that were lining up together with her “FUHAHAHAHA!” “HAHAHAHA!!” all of them laughed uproariously. That was a German person whose rhythm was of Las Vegas itself.

Kazuki finished taking food and returned to the table.

Kazuki and co.’s table was casually separated from the other guests taking the space of a half private room.

For them to always get guided to this kind of place no matter which restaurant they went to, surely it was because of the North American Knight

Order's command that had been given out. While it was to make them feel welcomed politely, it must be also to make it easier to observe them.

Kaguya-senpai who had already returned to the table smiled softly greeting him with "Welcome back".

Kaguya-senpai… she was acting as if there was nothing wrong on the surface.

On her plate there was only salad in a moderate amount served, despite how Kaguya-senpai should originally be a splendid meat eater. Meat was indispensable for senpai's nice body.

Of course the cause was not something like a diet… she didn't have appetite for food from being dispirited.

He knew the reason. The incident with Stella created a shadow in her heart. For Kazuki too the sense of loss from the girl who adored him as papa, and of course for everyone else too, Stella's disappearance reverberated inside their hearts. However, Kaguya-senpai received a damage bigger than anyone else.

Looking at a person that was feeling despondent far longer than even he himself, his feelings changed telling him that he couldn't feel despondent forever. From such mentality everyone else stood back on their feet, however, only Kaguya-senpai alone kept dragging behind the discouragement without letting it go.

When Kaguya-senpai was gloomy, everyone of the Magic Division became awkward.

Everyone indirectly attempted to cheer her up however—.

"Kaguyann—, look at this Great Senpai Kanon—☆"

Kanon-senpai who had finished taking food suddenly pulled Akane-senpai's hand and raised her voice.

Akane-senpai went "Wa, wait what are you doing, so suddenly" yet Kanon-senpai ignored her baffled voice and jumped to a position where she could look at everyone around the table.

Kanon-senpai was a third year Magic Division student that went out from the academy for internship and also the previous generation Magic Division student council president. She had a small stature, her spongy hair was like a puppy, a senpai who gave off the impression of always being energetically in state of continuous motion.

In contrast, Akane-senpai, who was the previous student council vice president, was an adult-like and intellectual person, she was always supporting the student council president who overflowed with energy.

Now, too, Kanon-senpai was swinging around Akane-senpai while facing her juniors before raising her voice.

"Entry number one, the most dangerous combi! From now on as the most senior here for the sake of stirring up this place, we will be doing manzai act-☆"[8]

"Wa-… what are you saying with an idea you haven't prepared anything for beforehand!? Isn't it too dangerous!?"

“It’s fine, I too don’t prepare anything at all but what’s important in this is your spirit! Akane just needs to give tsukkomi like usual-☆”

Akane-senpai who was weak in unexpected situations was about to blow her fuse, but Kanon-senpai declared with her big eyes shining strongly like stars. Those big eyes, although she said that she was going to enliven the place—it was looking straight at just Kaguya-senpai.

Kanon-senpai cast aside her seat for the sake of cheering up Kaguya-senpai. But this was quiet a drastic challenge. For an amateur to do a manzai act without even satisfactory preparation, Kazuki could see nothing except big disaster in the near future. Could Kanon-senpai really say anything interesting…?

“Actually, I still hadn’t actually entered the casino, so some time ago I came to the casino floor just by myself!”

While everyone was making a stir with baffled feelings, Kanon-senpai began to talk brightly.

“Now that you mentioned it, when everyone went to the casino on the first day, you were shutting yourself in the room because your stomach was ruined didn’t you?”

“That time something like beef stew burst out ‘BUFFEE—!’ unstoppably from my ass.”

“What the hell are you saying inside a buffet restaurant!”

- BASHIN* Akane-senpai struck Kanon-senpai’s cheek.

Kazuha-senpai who was eating beef stew even unhappily choked over where she almost spouted out the food.

“Today this Kanon-chan was going to make the casino get diarrhea and made them spit out coins like ‘BUFFEE—!’ for sure yeah… thinking like that exultantly, first I aimed for the poker table.”

“If it’s poker then you know the rules so that’s not a bad choice isn’t it.”

Akane-senpai recovered her calm and made an appropriate response.

“When I walked around the floor there was this awfully beautiful woman in a sexy bunny suit that played as dealer see, Kanon-chan then thought [UHO-] and went to that table. To make it easier to imagine let’s reproduce that scene☆ Akane, you act as the dealer.”

“Eh? E, even if you said that so suddenly what should I do here?”

“For the time being you need to have the same exposure rate as the bunny, please change into your Magic Dress and take a sexy pose☆ Come on quickly! If you don’t hurry the mood is going to get spoiled!”

“E, eeee… I, I get it… like this?”

It seemed that the firm person Akane-senpai thought that she couldn’t let the mood of the place get spoiled.

“Shem ha Meforash” like that, Akane-senpai put on the Magic Dress of Amon on her body from the Access.

Amon was originally an Egypt god Amen that was lowered as the demon of Solomon as a god of evil teaching. That Magic Dress of Amon had a different quality compared to the other 72 Pillar, forming an outfit that made one think of Egypt's sheets dress. The Magic Dress suited Akane-senpai's skin that had a somewhat dark color.

The fabric that only had uneasy surface area hid only Akane-senpai's important parts loosely, on top of that when she further took a sexy pose Akane-senpai showed some fidgeting from her embarrassment.

"Anybody that see this kind of bunny-san would be unable to help themselves from going 'UOOO-' right?" While Kanon-senpai was speaking, she continued the story. "Then I started playing poker, but to one's regret while I understand the rules, I don't really understand English you know. Like I couldn't remember the word that I wanted to say, or my pronunciation is too awkward, no matter what I couldn't express anything well."

"You, you were playing hooky when we studied English on the ship, weren't you?"

Akane-senpai was back-talking firmly.

"All of a sudden, my hand was hopeless guys, you know. In poker isn't there a rule that you can change your cards just once? But how to say that in English, I didn't understand at all."

"At that kind of time you got to say [draw] you know."

"Because I didn't understand that I immediately said [change]. When I did that, the dealer-san was somewhat dejectedly left from the table. In her place an even sexier lady was coming out."

"Eh, the dealer-san was changed?"

"Then while I hit the card, [Wrong, it's not that, I want to change my hand] I wanted to say that and I repeatedly shouted 'Change!', but each time I shouted that the dealer-san would withdraw and a new dealer would replace the previous one. Like that in the end there was a dreadfully too sexy dealer-san that came out. She was a lady that looked like a lump of eros."

"Eh, what kind of person came out…?"

"Then let's reproduce that scene one more time☆ Akane you do that dealer role, because that dealer's exposure rate was even more extreme, vanish your Magic Dress in part. And then make a sensual pose that goes 'puff puff'."

"E, eeee… is, is it fine like this?"

Akane-senpai who was at her wits end followed what she was told flusteredly, by cutting off magic power she simplified her Magic Dress. The ornaments disappeared, the majority of the loose dress was stripped, and her appearance turned into something like only underwear that protected just the important parts. She raised both her hands and emphasized her breast, "Pu, puff puff" voice like that was leaked out in small volume. Precisely because that breast had only a moderate size, that it made one feel a taboo in some respect.

Kazuki reflexively looked around, but the gaze of the other restaurant guests was blocked by a wall.

“Drop your hips next, yes, then open both your legs, shake your hips provocatively.”

Akane-senpai obeyed Kanon-senpai’s order perfectly in a state where her thoughts had stopped completely. The slender thighs that possessed a sense of cleanliness spread out vulgarly. For Akane-senpai to do something like this… the gap made Kazuki’s heart feel like it was pricked with a sweet needle from the shock.

Kazuki and Akane-senpai’s eyes met. Akane-senpai’s face changed as if she had come back to her senses before she looked down.

“Thi, this, where in the world this kind of dealer…”

“Correct, after I had come that far I harbored an uncomfortable feeling and when I looked carefully… there was a writing at the pink card on the table. Each time the dealer-san lost she would take off one piece of her clothes, that was what was written.”

“Isn’t that sex service! What are you using me for here!?”

Akane-senpai got back on her feet with a jump and hit Kanon-senpai *SUPAA—NN* with a pleasant sound.

“But I had already boarded the ship completely, the dealer-san too kept that pose while saying [Come on come on—nn], so I resolved myself ‘there is nothing else but to strip her’ you know.”

“You think I’m going to go further than this!?”

“And then it looked like [change] was not for changing hand but it had the meaning that you are dissatisfied with the girl, that was why I directly said which card I wanted to change. I thought if it was like that then it would get conveyed for sure. Like that first I ‘PASHIN!’ hit 6 on the table you see, then I wondered how do I say 6 in English again… after worrying for a little like that I said this then. ‘SEX!’”

“A forced elementary pronunciation miss!?”

“Next ‘PASHIN-‘ I hit 11, ‘isn’t there a special way of calling 11 in trump’, and then after worrying about it I said this. ‘FUCK!!’”

“You should call that Jack right-!?”

“But in the Spain language the pronunciation of ‘J’ need to use ‘F’ ain’t it?”

“Why do you knowing about something like that only instead!?”

“For the last I was going to proclaim that if you exchanged all these for me then it’s the end of the turn for me, so I wondered what is the saying to proclaim the end of a turn in poker again, if I remember right it should be ra-… something like that isn’t it… so after worrying about it I said this. ‘RAPE!’”

Kanon-senpai pointed at Akane-senpai with a snap saying that.

“And so with the feeling of 6, 11, and then next it’s your turn …[SEX, FUCK, RAPE□YOU!] I shouted like that repeatedly. Towards the provocative ero dealer.”

“It’s not rape but raise! If you do that then all conceivable ways of thinking regarding you is going to be mistaken as the worst!”

"After I did that there were these uncles in black uniform coming in a group, talking to me in English [That's troubling you know, dear customer] [This place is not providing a service until that far] [Even I can only go as far as stripping] they said things like that and chased me out, in the end, today too I couldn't go to the casino, dahaha!!"

As if to say that she had become completely amazed Akane-senpai hit Kanon-senpai's head one more time, while Kanon-senpai went "This is my leave—☆" and gave a bow. Should they clap or not… the atmosphere had turned complicated.

"What do you think, Kaguyan!?"

"There is excessive dirty joke that ran wild too much, even if you ask me how it was… it's troubling how to react to it…"

Kaguya-senpai answered while looking down.

"To thoroughly talk about nothing but dirty jokes until that far, on the contrary, is amazing."

Hikaru-senpai continued with an expression of a wry smile.

"Rather than an adlib it was just Kanon-senpai talking whatever she pleased, it feels like I'm only enjoying the reaction of the bullied Akane-senpai."

"Akane-oneesan was extremely cute desu! It was a sight for sore eyes desu!!"

"It was normally repulsive."

Continuing after Koyuki and Lotte, Mio said that with scornful eyes. Mio-san had something like this.

- KA—N!* Liz Liza-sensei chimed a sound with her tableware and scored [Bell one].[9]

"GUAAAAAAAAAAA-☆!"

With a motion as if being beaten up blue by unseen punches, Kanon-senpai writhed by herself.

"Th, the flower of cactus blooming…" Kanon-senpai whispered while hanging her head down crestfallenly.[10]

"Don't make a distraction saying something incomprehensible. The one who wants to writhe here is me."

Seeming like an excuse Kanon-senpai tilted her head saying "How strange-".

"Even though this kind of adult humor was extremely well received in the Knight Order's female dormitory."

"It's no good to group together that kind of dirty people with students you know. …Besides the reason that the senior knights were receiving well that kind of gag was because a shorty like you was overreaching yourself to talk about perverted material that they were smirking at you, it was just that."

"……….eh, it's like that?"

"That's right. Besides, a place like the Magic Division where there is a restriction on outings, the students there are the same as with an all-girls school, you're forcing yourself to act like an adult by repeatedly saying perverted material despite having zero experience with a male, all of that had been completely exposed to everyone around.”

“Eh… th, that…” Kanon-senpai was trembling all over, her big eyes that were like bright shining star were full of tears in the blink of an eye.

“HONGEEEEEEEEEEEEEE-!! Suddenly I got embarrassed!!”

“Well, the juniors that are here don’t have zero experience though…”

Akane-senpai said that while taking a glance at Kazuki’s direction.

The face of the always cool senpai was still red from the aftereffect of before.

“Akane-senpai, thanks for your hard work.”

When Kazuki gave words of appreciation, Akane-senpai averted her eyes in embarrassment.

“It’s not like I’m thinking that I suffered something embarrassing. After all there is no other male’s eyes here except Kazuki’s. That’s why it’s all right whatever got seen.”[11]

After saying that Akane-senpai made a ‘hah’ face and added in panic.

“…What I said just now, that [if it’s you, even if I get seen] doesn’t have any weird meaning, it’s just mean that [if it’s you, then surely you have gotten used to seeing something like a girl’s bare skin, so even if someone like me undresses], that’s all.”

“That’s not true at all senpai. After all Akane-senpai is a beautiful person.”

It felt weird to say that kind of thing in front of other girls but everyone else was also nodding.

Akane-senpai’s cheeks turned redder from the surrounding’s reaction and she restlessly returned to her meal.

“Hmph, what experience with a man.”

With a rough face, Liz Liza-sensei tilted her milk jockey and guzzled it down.

“Uuuu… even though I wanted to make Kaguyan to cheer up… I who cannot talk of anything except something like dirty jokes am a useless senior…☆”

“Umm, I’m particularly cheerful here so… Kanon-senpai too, please be cheerful yourself.”

Toward the thoroughly dispirited Kanon-senpai, Kaguya-senpai who was supposed to be putting on a brave face was now the one that tried to cheer up the other in an odd development. Looking at that situation, Kazuki pondered.

After he finished entering the bath and it was a time where he could only sleep, Kazuki crossed over the hotel’s gorgeous corridor and visited Kaguya-senpai’s room.

After lightly knocking there was a voice “Come in~”, a reply that seemed like usual yet felt powerless somehow came.

“Pardon me.” Kazuki entered inside the room.

The moment the door opened, he felt fresh wind blowing in.

The design of Kaguya-senpai’s room had changed compared to when he came here before. As a consideration so that Kazuki and the others who were staying in this hotel for a long period didn’t get bored, the hotel often changed the room designs.

Just in the short interval when they went for outing, not to mention the furniture and the lighting equipment, even things like wallpaper and door had been thoroughly changed with different things. It was practically like an illusionary alchemy. This country really liked detailed surprises like this.

Kaguya-senpai’s room was turned into a style of bright and open resort hotel.

The room was colored with a lot of decorative plants, a clear atmosphere could be felt.

…Perhaps the hotel side also sensed Kaguya-senpai’s atmosphere and tried to cheer her up.

The room was widely open, but Kaguya-senpai was like a patient that was uneasily waiting in the waiting room, she was quietly sitting on the sofa.

Looking at Kazuki who was coming,

“Even Otouto-kun is fussing about me… even though there are a lot of girls who want to spend their night with Otouto-kun.”

She murmured so. Usually it was from the girls that were intruding into Kazuki’s room in rotation, so it was rare for Kazuki to be the one who was choosing someone and went to them.

“I’m just thinking that I want to be together with senpai.” Kazuki sat down beside her.

It seemed that senpai was also just out of the bath, she was putting out a silk night gown. There was sweet aroma tickling the nose from that loose chest. It was completely like a large ring of flowers with flower pollen clinging on it. Even in the case that the person herself was not cheerful, she was someone with alluring color and scent that charmed the other sex from herself.

Kaguya-senpai heaved a deep sigh gloomily.

“Not only Kanon-senpai but I even made Otouto-kun worried about me, I really hate myself… Even though Otouto-kun yourself is in a far more dire situation compared to someone like me.”

“I’m not in any trouble at all senpai. Everyday I’m having fun.”

In reality Kazuki didn’t feel any stress at all.

There was no strong pressure on his position as Basileus—when the time to fight came there was no need to think of anything except for holding respect and defeating the opponent in front of his eyes.

Rather than that, Kazuki became concerned with Kaguya-senpai’s way of talking.

“Senpai, you yourself, haven’t you taking upon various things by yourself alone again?”

Kaguya-senpai had her breath a little hitched, then she turned to Kazuki’s direction.

Exactly because Kazuki had become a Basileus, because the girls in his surrounding had increased.

"Before senpai said to me that I'm [similar with your big brother] and senpai also depended on me, but recently it feels like senpai has returned to how you were in the past isn't it?"

At the fight with Naiarlatoteph, that time when he liberated Kaguya-senpai from her father's spell, Kazuki became aware of how Kaguya-senpai was secretly harboring a desire of [how she actually wanted to act spoiled to someone].

Kaguya-senpai was a person who had various faces. She was a hard-worker that seriously chased her ideal, she was also the big sister of her juniors, she was also something like the mother at the Witch's Mansion. Precisely because she tried her best and was conscious of herself that was like that, when she was alone with Kazuki she wanted an equal relationship between male and female. The time when she called him not as [Otouto-kun] but [Kazuki-kun] was the signal of that. And deeper inside her, she was also wishing for the shadow of her father when he was kind and her dead brother, she wanted to act spoiled like a little sister.

Because she was that kind of person it was not good for her to hold everything inside and wallowed alone.

In this recent period the only time when Kaguya-senpai was looking for Kazuki was only that night where Stella's incident happened.

"Stella… was something that couldn't be helped at all. That time when she met us she was already… Stella looked for us, what we could do, was only showing her a temporary dream."

There was nothing to lament. The very least they could do was to face forward, they had to change America into a happy country. For that sake, Kazuki denied North America's slavery and South America that changed death into power.

"Against lonely feelings, rely on someone, depend on them, comforting each other, burdening yourself alone won't change anything, isn't that right?"

Kaguya-senpai's expression that feigned a calmness broke down in pieces as if a crust was peeled off. What appeared was a face that even now was looking as if it was going to cry saying [Lonely! Lonely!]

"Senpai, I also feel lonely but… I cannot become Stella's replacement but… at the very least I will be by Kaguya-senpai's side forever. So please rely on me thinking of me as your big brother."

Kazuki hugged Kaguya-senpai tightly. Kaguya-senpai stared fixedly at Kazuki while, as if testing, she murmured a single word "Onii-chan…", then tears spilled out as if a dam had broken.

"Fueeeeeee~nn!! Onii-chaa~n!! I'm lonely~, it's lonely with Stella goneeeee~!! I don't wannaaaaa!!"

And then she buried her face on Kazuki's chest, crying with a desperate loud voice.

For a while Kaguya-senpai continued crying, venting out everything that she had been holding back.

“What kind of person was senpai’s big brother?”

Against Kaguya-senpai who was still sobbing, Kazuki asked as if to make her let out even more things that she was still holding back.

“He was kind, firm, a really reliable person.”

Why did that kind of person die he wondered.

“But papa was… because onii-chan was a man, because he couldn’t become an excellent knight he didn’t even look at him. For papa, onii-chan was a failed work. When papa decided that, then mama too.”

The former headmaster of knight academy… that person was only absorbed in making the Knight Order strong. There, he was taken advantage of by Naiarlatoteph, made so that he couldn’t see nothing else except for that, turning insane where he couldn’t see, in the end, his ego was completely broken.

“In a place where papa and mama didn’t look at, by an accident…”

Even though from Kaguya-senpai’s point of view he was a reliable big brother, in reality he was still a young child that couldn’t protect himself.

Kaguya-senpai’s family background, he guessed everything was completely destroyed at that time. And then, there was only the distorted father’s despotism that remained.

“Right now, I myself too only noticed for the first time. I, yearn for family…”

Kazuki knew what she meant.

Kaguya-senpai came into contact with all the surrounding people as if they were family. Even at their first meeting with Lotte, she was also like that. And then, she would absolutely not going to tolerate any discord.

She acted like a big sister, acted like a mother, hiding her desire that sometimes wanted to act spoiled to a big brother—she tried to play every kind of family role towards other people. Surely all the things that she couldn’t obtain in her time as a child, she tried to take them all back after she grew.

That was why, for Kaguya-senpai, Stella was not a mere make-believe daughter.

Surely Kaguya-senpai wished that she wanted to become Stella’s mother from the bottom of her heart.

To be made to lose that, was a despair for her. There was no doubt that Kaguya-senpai completely felt that she was [a human who couldn’t obtain the warmth of family as expected].

‘Clearing away that doubt should be my role’, Kazuki thought. That time when he enrolled into the Magic Division, he was saved by Kaguya-senpai’s kindness that treated him as if he was family.

“I am an [Otouto-kun], yet I also want to become Kaguya-senpai’s big brother… if Kaguya-senpai is the Magic Division’s mother, then I too want to be the father.”

“Kazuki-kun…”

The strength of Kaguya-senpai’s hugging arms became stronger. From her expression, her feeling that was wanting to act spoiled towards a big brother was fading. Her role was changing.

Kaguya called Kazuki’s name regarding him as a male.

And then with an intense vigor she put her lips on Kazuki’s as if devouring his lips greedily. As if wrenching open something, Kaguya’s lips entered inside Kazuki’s mouth, her tongue entangled onto his.

It was a boiling hot kiss of passion, after even forgetting to breathe for a while, when their lips separated Kaguya’s eyes had changed color into violet. Her gown was taken off and fell gently down. That naked body, was faintly wrapped in light of magic power that sharpened her sensitivity.

These few days, Kaguya didn’t use Asmodeus’ magic at all. Nevertheless the aforementioned magically excited condition she had was now called forth by her own will.

“Kazuki-kun… right now I, intensely, want Kazuki-kun’s baby…”

Chokingly and sincerely, she whispered such a thing.

Kazuki too took off and threw away his upper pajama. As if to say that it was not enough, Kaguya tried to take off Kazuki’s lower pajama altogether with his underwear. Both of them matched their hands and took them off, Kazuki hugged Kaguya hard.

With their posture hugging each other, Kaguya pushed Kazuki down on the sofa. Although it was an American-sized sofa that was spacious like a bed, when both of their bodies laid down, if they didn’t embrace each other they were going to roll and fall down. Kaguya wouldn’t let his body go for even a moment, while taking painful breathing, she rubbed her breast on Kazuki’s chest, she rubbed her groin on Kazuki’s thigh, her whole body undulated.

Kaguya’s body was more voluptuous than anyone, soft and elastic.

Embracing close small statured girls as if wrapping them up was also great, but embracing with Kaguya felt exactly like a [nearly drowning] sensation.

Kazuki too didn’t use his hand but responded using his whole body. They were rubbing their naked bodies at each other.

“Otouto-kun, you became hard…”

Kaguya whispered into his ear. The heat of that whisper made Kazuki feel even more heated.

“Nn…” The lump of Kazuki’s urge was wrapped into the triangle of Kaguya’s wetly drenched groin and both her thighs. That area was Kaguya’s most voluptuous body part. As if trying to squeeze it out just like that, she wriggled her waist back and forth. The soft and elastic wet flesh wriggled—against the pleasure he had never experienced before, Kazuki couldn’t endure and he almost leaked out his voice.

Stubbornly, Kazuki also fiercely knocked his waist on the pseudo-hole of the groin and thighs plumply tightening on him.

Kaguya’s sensitive spot was also scooped out by the sensation of Kazuki’s hard thing, Kaguya too gradually turned wet throughout her body, sweet voices incessantly continued to be whispered into his ear.

“Kazuki-kun…I want it, I want a baby-!”

Kaguya drew in her waist as if to invite Kazuki even deeper.

…That was no good. So as not to get swallowed inside, until the end he contained himself of only rubbing that entrance. In exchange, he made upward movements that fiercely scooped up the spot.

“Aa…♡ aa…♡”

- Nuchun! Nuchun!* The sounds rapidly turned wetter.

Kaguya’s whole body shivered in twitches. But unsatisfied with a single climax, her body continued bending back and forth.

“That’s no good, Kaguya.” Kazuki whispered back. Then with an ecstatic redly drunk face Kaguya,

“…Onii-chan! Then, then make me feel even better!”

Saying that, she fawned on him. Her allure that tempted Kazuki viscously changed into a bewitching sweetness like a little sister. Without using any hand at all, with only body and body, the both of them climbed onto the height.

The movement of the two stopped, both of their convulsions aligned with each other. Something slimy was released between the gap of Kaguya’s soft flesh. But from Kazuki’s experience, he knew that Kaguya wouldn’t be satisfied with just two or three times. Kazuki’s body also couldn’t possibly cool down yet right now. Even he himself felt a mysterious bottomless something. While being wrapped by the released slimy texture, both of their breathing and sweat turned endlessly intense, even now the two of them were rubbing their bodies at each other.

Part 6

The sword-school Arthur used was sharp.

When he thought that the small one-handed sword was swung compactly, the point of the sword sharply leaped up and the trajectory changed into a thrust. Due to its double edge, compared to a Japanese katana, it had extensive variation. The free alteration that could also change into a feint was hard to deal with even when it had been Foresighted.

The sword master named Arthur used precise movements that didn't have any erratic emotion, having said that it didn't mean that he repeated a mechanical pattern, while observing his opponent with a fearful concentration power he wielded a precise high speed sword.

Compared to Kazuki who used his whole body to swing Ame no Murakumo, that elegant one-handed sword looked like a conductor stick swung by a conductor. It was not a swing filled with that great of a strength, but the Enchant Aura that covered the whole body was so thick it made fear run through his spine. Even though the movement was light, that one blow was by no means light.

Kazuki was not unprepared against even a single blow, but when Kazuki determined his aim during one of those attacks Kazuki started <Instant Positioning> in order to entangle the sword with his. Following the starting movement of his opponent's swing, Kazuki parried so that the trajectory of the sword would shift to miss him by a hairbreadth, and then as the finishing touch he would repel the sword. Like that the opponent's posture would break where Kazuki would turn it into a counterattack instantly, that was Kazuki's sure-win pattern however…

"Mu-!" Arthur quickly detected the danger and leaped back.

Due to Arthur's elegant one-handed sword skill that swung without putting body weight on it, even when his swordsmanship was disarrayed his posture didn't break. Kazuki's counterattack that should be landing without fail missed its chance, both sides were even without either having their stance broken and they took a distance from each other. To break Arthur using that pattern he needed a stronger repelling power in the end… reinforcement magic would be necessary.

"Waa—! Applause applause!"

Watching that breath-taking offense and defense of the two, the sitting and observing Hikaru-senpai clapped and cheered.

This was his first time seeing someone who actually said applause from her mouth.

Besides Hikaru-senpai, Beatrix too was watching over the offense and defense with an unusually serious look. It was just that her attire was cutepajamas that had the feel of just waking up. Her long hair was towering up vertically like a tower as one long straight object, …what an impossible bed hair.

It was the custom practice time every morning. Hikaru-senpai who got carried away by shopping fever since they arrived at Las Vegas and skipped the practice was also making her return, the rare guest came along with the two, and an unusual excitement was displayed on the still dim courtyard of Hotel Yggdrasil.

“Interesting.”

Arthur sheathed his sword while smiling refreshingly. In contrast with Kazuki who was wearing gym uniform, he was wearing a fit suit since the morning.

The one-handed sword Arthur held was a broadsword that was said to be common in Britain’s Knight Order.

“You really skillfully use the katana—the two-handed sword. You swing the two-handed sword powerfully, but the point of the sword moves delicately as if it’s a one-handed sword to brush off my attack. Two-handed sword, one-handed sword, spear, shield… you skillfully handle all those roles with a single piece of katana.”

“I too feel how frightening you are. The current you has one of your hands empty. When talking about the famous weapon that King Arthur possessed in the legend then it was not only the one-handed sword Excalibur. Two-handed sword, spear, short sword, and shield too…you should be able to skillfully use all kinds of weapons.”

The western knight that mastered every martial art… that should be the real image of King Arthur. Kazuki imagined someone that could skillfully used all kinds of arms with a similar standard to what he had just seen.

“Good insight.” After Arthur laughed, now he was the one that observed Kazuki in return.

“The way you grip is different with western sword art. By putting a space between the grips of the two hands, it becomes possible to handle the sword blade delicately… and you put the center of gravity not in your dominant hand but in the opposite left hand isn’t it?”

Kazuki admired Arthur’s observing eye.

“A Japanese katana is curved because it stresses sharpness, so it will easily warp if a force is applied from the side. That’s why the blade needs to be handled accurately. Putting the center of gravity in the left hand…”

The human body took the balance at the focal point of the left foot and with that the right foot could step forward to start moving. Therefore the stance was the right hand and right foot directed forward.

Making the right hand as the fulcrum, power was put into the left hand to wield the sword—in order to perform that effectively, using the principle of leverage, the wielder needed to open as much space as possible between the grips of the two hands.

When Kazuki mixed his gesture and explained, Arhur nodded in satisfaction saying “I see, I see.”

“Although Ame no Murakumo is not a Japanese katana, but it has the shape of an ancient sword.”

Kazuki also sheathed back Ame no Murakumo. The still new sheath was a straight thing for Ame no Murakumo’s personal use.

A Japanese katana was a curved single-edged blade, but an ancient sword like Ame no Murakumo was a straight sword that had a double-edge.

However when he swung this Ame no Murakumo it bended fiercely, drawing the same arc like a curved Japanese katana exhibiting its sharpness. Thanks to that Kazuki could handle it with the same sense like the Japanese katana he was used to. If he became familiar with it then he should be able to make use of how the sword was double-edged.

…It was a common theory in the modern sword art to take some space between the grips of both hands, but in the case of ancient sword art it was devised even further. In order to aim for victory, it goes to the one who makes the first move from a long distance, there was also a method with the right hand holding the end of the handle and then swinging the sword as hard as you could with one hand, then when in a close-quarter combat inside a small room the user needed both hands sticking at each other at the head of the handle not leaving any space between the two hands in order to swing the katana.

Beatrix had her eyes turn round from the outfield.

“What a complex thinking.”

“Yes, it’s a concept that one won’t think of if they only mainly plan to strike with a sword using power.”

Arthur nodded sharing the same opinion with Beatrix.

“Although in the case where the opponent is wrapped in magic power or wearing armor, I think rather than a sharp slash stressing cutting ability, its more effective to attack with all one’s strength.”

“Judging from appearances, it seems that Japanese Mythology and Solomon Mythology has few in armor-type Magic Dress and armor equipping magic. I wonder if there is also that kind of influence?”

“Arthur is the type that uses a lot of magic that creates Sacred Treasure with armor Magic Dress then? Also you can skillfully use all Sacred Treasures with such high level just like now.”

“Fu-fu-fu, now I wonder about that?”

It was absolutely like what he thought, thinking that Kazuki made a wry smile.

—They respectively exposed a little of each other’s power scope.

Due to that they could affirm their friendly relationship, it was one kind of jest between each other.

For some reason Hikaru-senpai was looking alternately at Kazuki and Arthur with sparkling eyes.

“Somehow both of you, look like high school boys that showed each other’s dick as proof of friendship!”

“Normal high school boy don’t do that kind of thing senpai… what in the world are you saying…”

“Eh, they don’t do that!? Then let’s do it!”

Hikaru-senpai in the past had mistakenly thought that the BL manga she had read with pleasure(there was no mistake) as a manga that depicted what males actively participated in a lot of the time. Sometimes she exposed a peculiar world outlook.

“Ah, but in the first place Arthur-san is not a man, but a girl isn’t it-“

Hikaru-senpai grinned at Arthur teasingly.

“…You are still saying that? Geez there is no basis at all of that, how ridiculous.”

Arthur raised his voice just a little and showed an exaggerated shoulder shrug.

However even though Hikaru-senpai had said that far, yet Arthur didn’t reject it and showed the proof that she was wrong. He was just pushing back the topic saying it was absurd without giving Hikaru-senpai a chance to explain.

…If Arthur was actually falsifying his gender, perhaps it was a secret that was related to his contracted Diva and his power as Basileus.

Until now most of the time it was just Arthur that one-sidedly observed Kazuki’s battle. Then, even if his side was also extracting a little more information out from him that he surely he couldn’t be blamed.

“Then if you are really a man, you will be fine even if you have your chest touched by me right?”

When Kazuki approached Arthur straightforwardly, Arthur went “…He-!?” and raised an upset voice.

“Wh, what are you saying I wonder. To, touching my chest? …Please think sensibly. For a gentleman, even if it’s against the same gender but touching someone’s chest without any reason at all is something that is just not done. I really misjudged you.”

"There is also no reason at all for you to be troubled being touched right? We are fellow males after all. You are accused by Hikaru-senpai that you are a girl so don't you want to prove yourself? Fu-fu-fu."

Arthur took several staggered steps back. Immediately Kazuki also filled the distance only as much as Arthur's movement.

It was as if the two were dancing, both of them kept facing each other with Arthur that ran backward and Kazuki who chased him readily.

"Tha, that… it's, you… anyway please stop."

"What anyway, why are you running?"

With both his hands groping around, Kazuki chased Arthur who was running while saying unclear words.

It was fun seeing Arthur who had become King earlier than him and always constantly acted composed turned flustered like this. He could win, he could really win against the Britain King!

"Wa, wa wa wa wa, wait!" Arthur was cornered until the wall.

Kazuki took a powerful [wall bang] posture. It was the sure-kill technique that he had learned from his interaction with Koyuki.

"Fufufu, you can't escape anymore Arthur."

Putting his left hand right beside Arthur's face, he brought his face near him in a sudden movement.

"Me too-, I'm touching too-♪" Hikaru-senpai was also making a groping motion with both her hands and came clinging.

"Please stop, you pervert duo!"

"Fufufu, please resign yourself for the sake of Japan and Britain's alliance…!"

"Are you a brute-"

Still it was enough to just ascertaining Arthur's reaction. Looking from his state, even without touching…

Kazuki was thinking of stopping just barely before touching.

"Wa, wait wait wait! …Kyaa-!!"

At that time when Arthur raised a scream, just before he was thinking of stopping, Kazuki's right wrist was caught by someone and with a strong power he was pulled right to the side.

Being pulled to the side including his body in a half-hug, his palm landed on an ambiguous softness *pofu-*. Kazuki reflexively tried to ascertain what he touched and groped two, three times repeatedly.

Then "Nn-…" a tickled voice was leaked out—

"Be, Beatrix!? What are you doing!?"

Kazuki groped Beatrix's breast through the pajama. Kazuki's palm was covering over the slight bulge on Beatrix's firm body.

Compared to the palm of Kazuki who was just exercising until just now, it was a chilly sensation.

Even when he asked what she was planning, Beatrix didn't let go and continued to push out her breasts.

"For some reason it feels like I was made as an outcast." She answered.

"I too still haven't gotten used to the Japanese language. I get left behind if all of you talk too fast. I was desperately listening but… I get the feeling that you guys were saying something about ascertaining each other's warrior's chest muscle."

"For you to catch words strangely like that, isn't that just your brain addition!?"

"Rather than ascertaining the chest muscle of someone who dislikes doing it, it's better for you to ascertain mine as much as you want!"

"Chest muscle you say… but doesn't it feel squishy instead?"

It was fairly small, but it didn't mean that she was completely boobless. Touching that spot there was a texture that if he was a man there was no way that he would not be happy, touching it like this from a misunderstanding made Kazuki feel guilt. But there was no sign at all from Beatrix that she was going to release Kazuki's wrist that she was holding tightly.

"Squishy is it, so my training is still not sufficient. But… being rubbed like this feels good for some reason Kazuki! It's a warrior's happiness!!"

"That's not a warrior's happiness at all!"

A heart mark that marked a positivity level up flew at him from Beatrix.

To get her positivity level increased from something like this!

"…Geez, really. Looking from your flustered state, you were planning to stop just before touching weren't you?"

Looking at Kazuki who was flustered from Beatrix's breast, Arthur saw through how Kazuki was not really seriously going to touch him and heaved a deep sigh.

"Though I got the feeling that someone let out a really cute voice [kyaa-] just now."

Still getting caught by Beatrix, Kazuki turned just his head to say that.

"No one was making a noise like that. Surely it's just your imagination. …Please just leave it at that."

With a chop, Arthur hit down Kazuki's hand that was covering Beatrix's chest.

Perhaps Beatrix had been satisfied already, she easily released her hand.

"Rather than something like that, let's talk about something a little more serious."

Arthur bluntly changed the topic.

"…This situation, how long do you think it's going to continue?"

Arthur lowered her voice. What she meant by this situation was how regardless of Kazuki's declaration that they would become North America's ally, they still hadn't been granted a meeting with America's King.

They would continuously be in a limbo as long as they didn't meet the other party's boss.

"That the meeting doesn't happen is because they are doubting us right, perhaps."

Kazuki thrust his right hand that was groping a breast just now into his pocket while saying his own guess.

Before Kazuki had discovered North America's slave factory that was boldly hidden inside South America's territory, liberated the slaves, and destroyed the factory. Furthermore he defeated the Slave Director Red Metallica—and as a result, killed him.

Of course the King would surely know about the facility destruction and the disappearance of his close subordinate immediately. The timing also matched with just when Kazuki and the others just returned to Las Vegas.

In order to feign that it was the Indian's deed, Kazuki and co. thoroughly destroyed the factory leaving no evidence behind before withdrawing but—it was only natural to be doubted.

"There is still no sign that the South Americans will come attacking, so aren't they right now in the middle of leisurely investigating the ruined building in case there is something that can be proof?"

Looking from the view point of the other party, Kazuki and co. were suspicious. However, if Kazuki and his group joined South America's side then North America wouldn't have any chance to win… exactly because they were thinking like that that they couldn't even treat Kazuki imprudently. Based from that standing point, Kazuki and co. were the ones who stood in the superior position.

"How tedious."

Arthur grimaced and scratched his head. From these few days associating with him Kazuki understood a few things, but this Basileus didn't seem to like sneaky plans.

Arthur too was by no means someone who moved without planning. For his objective he formed alliance with Japan, giving out information in small amounts trying to skillfully move the situation to be convenient for him. However he didn't try to lie or deceive. He was likable with his consistency and honesty.

At that point, they had already plunged into the middle of plunging at the vortex of suspicion and chaos in their relation with North America.

"What concerns me is the silence of the Germans."

"Mu?" Beatrix reacted. Without needing it being said, Germany was Beatrix's mother country.

"Regarding the reply for the cooperation system from now on, and regarding how we are bringing around Beatrix as we pleased, it will be strange if there is no reply soon."

In the East-West war of Japan and Yamato, Beatrix ignored the cooperative relation with Japan and suddenly attacked their side in a betrayal act. It was because of the misinformation that Loki spread that Beatrix became instigated, but still…

Kazuki was thinking of not pursuing about that betrayal and wanted to continue their cooperative relation from now on too. After all, for the Norse Mythology too Loki should be a bitter enemy. Damian and Eleonora returned to their country in order to explain the situation, but Kazuki ordered Beatrix to pay her debt and one-sidedly took around Beatrix. Damian and Eleonora should have already arrived at their homeland a long time ago. Then what were they planning from now on, would they make Beatrix go home, it was strange that no reaction came from the other side.

“Certainly it’s troubling if Germany won’t become our ally. Our defense is to short of hand. I don’t think that the worst scenario will happen, but…”

If in the worst scenario, Germany moved not according to their prediction… if for some playful reason they became Loki’s ally like Russia… in that case, for Arthur and Kazuki it wouldn’t be the time to even think of America. They would abandon everything that they were doing right now where they had to hurry to return to their own country.

Already, Kazuki and Arthur were walking on a tightrope where it would be dangerous if their absence in their country was exposed. They were making use of Italia’s Regina keeping her eye on Loki, but just depending on that felt uneasy.

They were doing this with the assumption that Germany would fulfill the role of keeping the balance.

That was why everyday Akane-senpai returned to Queen Kaguya that was anchored at San Fransisco several times to confirm whether there was any contact that came through the INMARSAT communication.

“There is no need to worry.”

Hearing the talk, Beatrix who was ruminating with her head down raised her face.

“Our Basileus… Hrotsvit-sama will not join hands with the likes of the Chaos Side. Also she shouldn’t be leaving alone the matter about me like this forever.”

[Hrotsvit], was that the name of the German Basilleus, for the first time Kazuki became aware of that name.

In any case there was no news that came whether from the North America’s King or German’s Basilleus, South America was also not attacking so the situation was stagnating.

“We have to make use of this given free time effectively.”

“For instance perhaps we could become stronger by piling up training like this.”

Arthur floated a smile in his reply. It looked like that Arthur too liked training.

Certainly it was just like he said, but in Kazuki’s case he was not limited to just that.

Perhaps Arthur and Beatrix were already slightly aware, but Kazuki became stronger from the power of bonds with everyone. For the sake to become strong, was not the reason but… he had to use this time for the sake of everyone.

After the intensive training, Kazuki took a shower.

Of course he could also clear away all the sweat and filth with only the power of magic, but rinsing it all away with a shower and changing his clothes was overwhelmingly comfortable and it also reset his feelings.

The hotel Yggdrasil's one floor also included a large public bath that was reserved for them.

If clothes were entered into the dressing room's basket, the hotelman would launder them without being asked and deliver it afterwards. Rather, this temporary residence left nothing to be desired to the degree that he wanted to say to give the chore to him too.

Kazuki felt refreshed from the shower, changed into his plain clothes and exited the large bathroom.

And then he returned to his own room… and realized that he kept his cell phone inside the pocket of his taken off clothes and forgot to take it out.

Reluctantly he turned back to return to the dressing room.

In the middle of the corridor he unexpectedly encountered Koyuki where she was saying "puu" pulled his sleeve, so for a while Kazuki flirted and caressed Koyuki.

Parting with Koyuki and finally arrived until in front of the dressing room, he put his hand on the door.

Kazuki noticed something strange.

There was a faint sound inside. The user of this male bath was supposedly only Kazuki.

Was it the hotelman that came to collect the dirty clothes he wondered, but it was still too early for that.

Thinking it suspicious he sharpened his senses and sensed a weak magic power from the room inside.

Kazuki carefully opened the door a little and peeked inside.

"Kazuki… Kazu-kun…"

An ardent voice leaked out from the door gap.

'Eh?' Kazuki thought. Someone that called Kazuki as Kazu-kun, and then that ardent tone of voice was…

The one who was in the male section of the dressing room was Kazuha-senpai. Moreover she was picking up Kazuki's gym uniform and underwear that were drenched with sweat from the dirty clothes basket, and pressed her face on them.

- suu—, haa—*, matching with such deep breathing sound there was a faint light of magic power leaking out—she was sharpening her sense of smell with magic power and sniffed the smell of Kazuki's clothes with all she had.
- kuchu kuchu* There was also a faint watery sound. Raising the clothes with one hand, her other hand was reaching onto her lower body. Kazuha-senpai was in her uniform, but from her skirt her underwear was lowered until her knees. Her other hand was

quietly moving inside that skirt. There was also magic light power emitted out from inside the skirt.

“Kazu-kun… Kazu-kun-“

The voice and the act little by little increased in intensity.

…That Kazuha-senpai was, doing this kind of thing.

Kazuki received a shock. Certainly Koyuki too had once made a slight confession that she did that kind of thing. But it was hard to imagine her appearance practically doing it.

Kazuha-senpai’s appearance was awfully graphic that it shook Kazuki. It was different from desiring a skinship and affection because there was the loved person in front of our eyes. It was an appearance where by herself, with only her own hand and delusion she was purely indulging in pleasure. Furthermore, that Kazuha-senpai was burying her face into Kazuki’s taken off underpants.

- GACHA!*

At that time Kazuki’s hand slid off from the rotated door knob. The knob returned to its original angle with a half rotation, raising an out of place large sound.

“ueAa-!?” Kazuha-senpai raised a strange voice and raised her face from the underwear, then she turned to his direction.

“……aa- …….Kazu, kun…”

Her face that was bright red from the excitement of her act until now froze from dumbfoundment.

In a flash Kazuha-senpai hid Kazuki’s clothes behind her back. And then “Wr, wrong, that, this is” Her mouth opened trying to say something looking for excuse. But no matter how there was no way she could think of an excuse for this kind of situation, Kazuha-senpai’s lips was trembling in shivers, tears slowly gathered in her eyes.

Unable to bear it Kazuha-senpai tried to escape from that place.

However her panty that was lowered until her knees got her legs entangled making her fall down cruelly.

In panic Kazuki jumped and embraced Kazuha-senpai who almost fell down without even taking ukemi.[12]

He supported her, but—not trying to get up from that position, he pushed her down in reverse.

“What were you doing, senpai?”

So that she wouldn’t be able to resist Kazuki pinned both of Kazuha-senpai’s hands, held them down, and whispered into her ear.

Kazuha-senpai went “that, that” with her eyes turning round and round everywhere.

“To reinforce your sense of smell while sniffing the smell of the underwear with your all, as expected that’s really embarrassing.”

“Yo, you’re wrong-! This is a special training for my newly inspired general magic…!”

She said out something incoherent.

Pointed out by Kazuki, her expression that was a mix of shock and shame totally turned into a single color of shame.

Kazuki stayed quiet in order to wait for the reply, he was only sniffing the smell, not giving out any sign of touching at all.

Thereupon as if to coax him, Kazuha-senpai's magic power light gradually turned stronger.

"…Be, because in the snow mountain, being touched by Kazuki with this felt really good so… experiencing something like that will make it a habit…"

"And then senpai touched yourself alone. Even though senpai is a genius of general magic yet you use magic for something like this, furthermore it was while sniffing the smell of someone's underwear."

"Uuuu… why are you saying something that mean-"

Kazuha-senpai, who in the past had verbally abused Kazuki that he was a harem pervert, was now raising a pitiable voice.

"Because if I don't bully Kazuha-senpai, you won't be honest to me, would you? Even though if senpai honestly pleaded to me then I too will be happy, I'll answer senpai's demand with my all."

Kazuha-senpai's eyes that Kazuki was staring at was wrapped with bewitching light.

Kazuki released his hands from Kazuha-senpai's legs. However Kazuha-senpai kept her legs open with her own will and didn't seem like she would close it. Instead she pushed open that soaked place with both her hands and directed it to Kazuki.

While shutting her eyes tightly to bear her shame, she raised her voice.

"Ka, Kazu-kun, touch this place again! That time before felt far better compared to touching myself so… touch my inside with Kazu-kun's hand!!"

With a slide Kazuki's finger entered the inside of Kazuha-senpai.

The tips of his finger immediately prodded at the weak spot of Kazuha-senpai that he found out from before. That small stimulation was amplified by Kazuha-senpai's magic skill that could be called genius and "nHii-!" Kazuha-senpai gasped in convulsion. Kazuha-senpai immediately pressed her mouth with both her hands.

"Senpai, don't hold back your voice, please show me your cute side more honestly."

Kazuki whispered into her ear. To expose herself honestly, there was still a lacking step for Kazuha-senpai to reach that mental state. Kazuha-senpai was trembling in shudders.

Kazuki tickled tracing a round shape inside Kazuha-senpai's stomach.

"Kazu-kunn-♡ It feels good-♡ I love you Kazu-kun-♡"

"Does senpai love me only because it feels good?"

"Yo, you are wrong, I'll be honest so, don't say anything mean-!"

Kazuha-senpai writhed while hiding her face with both her hands. The liquid that overflowed from her lovely place increased the stickiness, it was foaming whitely. While Kazuki attacked her weak spot with one hand, his other hand wrenched open Kazuha-senpai's hand while he said "please don't hide your face". The cute Kazuha-senpai who was melting from pleasure was exposed. Thanks to her disarrayed breathing, a single line of droll dripped down from her mouth.

At the same time, he moved his right hand even stronger and dug up around.

"FUAAAAAAAAAAAA-♡"

Kazuha-senpai trembled *GAKU GAKU!* while shrieking, tightening hard around Kazuki's finger. For the moment Kazuki stopped his stimulation and let her rest, then her stiffened body relaxed in resignation from the backlash.

"Aa, aaaa…"

- chororororoto*…From Kazuha-senpai's there where Kazuki's finger was still inside, golden liquid made a splash, stain was spreading on the carpet of the dressing room.

"Ah…AAA!" Kazuha-senpai recovered her reasoning and yelled.

"So, sorry! I, I, pe, pee…uaaaaa, no way, no, it's not stopping…"

"It's fine senpai, it can be cleaned up later using magic. …Rather than that, please show more of your cute appearance with honesty. Please, let out all the part of the person that is inside Kazuha-senpai."

At the same time when Kazuha-senpai peeing was stopping, Kazuki once again restarted his stimulation with his right hand.

"This, this kind of appearance…, ah…aaaaaa…♡"

The shell that was hiding Kazuha-senpai melted like a candle and vanished.

"N-, no, feeling this happy and this good will turn me strange…! Like this I, will become, a pervert…!"

"Kazuha-senpai, I love you."

"I, I too love Kazu-kunnnnnnnnnn♡"

Once again Kazuha-senpai convulsed fiercely while screaming.

For a while Kazuha-senpai's breathing turned feeble.

When Kazuki began to clean up the stain in the carpet, Kazuha-senpai returned to her senses and leaped up.

"Tha, that's, I'll do that myself-!!"

When Kazuha-senpai held her hand at her own careless stain, along with light the stain disappeared. It didn't disappear by being moved to a different place.

"Eh… disintegration!?"

Kazuha-senpai's innate talent was sublimed until a miraculous height from losing herself in her concentration in her wish to vanish the embarrassing stain. The disintegration of material—surely if she got used to it, it would also be possible for a phenomenon disintegration to be done with it. It was the same technique as how Regina made low level magic invalid by disintegrating everything.

The disposal was over in an instant, Kazuha-senpai then yelled “I don’t know what kind of face I have to show myself with here—” before escaping with a whoosh.

Witnessing the awakening moment of the world’s highest level of magic skill from the world’s highest level of ‘whatever, I don’t care’, really what a person whose limits couldn’t be seen… thinking that, Kazuki shuddered.

Part 7

Finally the time where the group members had begun to wake up had come, this time it was heading to the kitchen to prepare the breakfast. He had already made an agreement with the hotel management to borrow the kitchen.

In the middle of the corridor he unexpectedly came across Koyuki again where she pulled his sleeve saying “puu puu”, so for a while Kazuki flirted and caressed her.

After that he entered the inside of the restaurant’s kitchen.

“I have been waiting, Nii-sama!” A black cat jumped out from inside the kitchen.

“Kanae! Why are you here?”

Even though she was a girl that had never done any household chore at all since the past.

“Fufufu, rather than asking why, doesn’t Nii-sama have something else to say to me?”

Kanae who leaped at him like a cat was—wearing naked apron.

…No, when he looked carefully she was wearing a panty. The panty could be peeked out secretly from the side of the apron. It seemed that she didn’t have the courage to wear a true naked apron.

…Even though as a step sisterlittle sister she was acting with too much boldness, now when their relationship had become a male and female relationship Kanae was entering a guarded stance instead. This girl couldn’t become bold except in a gag atmosphere.

“The newly-wed wife Kanae in naked apron has come to help with the breakfast cooking~! Now, please cook me with the flame of love!! Your order is me isn’t it-“

“Having someone this eroticly cute clinging to me will make me unable to concentrate on the cooking.”

Kazuki took out the ingredients from the refrigerator and lined them up in the kitchen, then he stroked Kanae’s head.

“Eh? Just when I thought that a tsukkomi will come I got let free while getting honestly praised? Ehehe~, if Nii-sama is stroking me like that I’m going to feel it~. Nhooooooooooo!”

Kanae opened wide her eyes and licked with her tongue. ‘Don’t make funny faces.’

Right now she was like this but… when he imagined the time passing from now on and a [Kanae of the love relationship] developing, Kazuki secretly felt his heart beating fast.

- BAN!* The kitchen door was opened vigorously.

"Fufufu, Kanae-san, for you to call that as naked apron, as usual you are really completely lacking aren't you!"

"Funya!?" "That voice!"

The ones who appeared were the Ryuutaki sisters—and both of them were also in a naked apron.

When Miyabi-senpai made a turn with a twirl to display her appearance, her raw bottom shook like jelly.

Looking at that authentic naked apron, Kazuki and Kanae trembled with fear.

"You guys are exhibitionist pervert sisters! Return back to your mirror world!!" Kanae yelled.

"W, we are not perverted here! Appealing like this, is because we want to obtain affection from Kazuki!"

Miyabi-senpai pressed the fringe of her apron while taking a glance at Kazuki. The fringe of the apron was short like a miniskirt, it looked like everything would be seen just by having it move away a little.

…To do something that extreme even though in reality she was actually embarrassed with it. This person was not an exhibitionist, she only had the bad habit to self-explode.

Shinobu-senpai on the other hand, she once possessed the sensible side to remonstrate Miyabi-senpai who was once wearing a perverted swimsuit, but since her heart was opened as a result of worrying of what kind of distance would be fine for her to come in contact with Kazuki, she had turned to a direction of not caring about anything.

"Gau" Shinobu-senpai calmly entered into the kitchen, then she began to eat munchingly the bacon and sausage from among the lined up ingredients.

"Shinobu-senpai, please don't snatch food right from the beginning!!"

"It's troubling if you misunderstand my coming here is to help or anything. I'm the sampling expert beast."

Recently this girl was flexible like a beast, she lived without thinking of anything.

"If, if it's like this, I will take off my panty too!!"

Opposing the too free sisters, Kanae speedily took off her panty.

"Here, Nii-sama, a little sister's freshly taken off and steamy panty, this is Japan's specially selected ingredient you know!!"

While Kanae made a clamor to hide her embarrassment, she pushed the panty to Kazuki. It was a simple white panty that had no seductiveness in it, yet that made it all the cuter instead. Perhaps because Kanae's temperature had risen from her shyness, but the panty was steamy.

“No, I don’t know what to do even if you hand me over your panty. It’s troubling thinking from a sanitary aspect so just keep it somewhere else.”

“The fresh panty of the cute little sister is coolly judged as garbage!? This thing is okay even if Nii-sama put it in your mouth you know! In a sexual meaning!”

He didn’t have any fetish to see a panty with that kind of eye, so Kazuki washed his hands and began the cooking preparations.

“It can’t be helped nyaa—” saying that Kanae wore back her panty and helped Kazuki.

The separation of cultures for ten-odd years made splendid developments even in the field of food.

In Japan there was a fixation on the ingredient’s freshness, drawing out the simple charm of that ingredient thoroughly was demanded, developing the chef’s skill in alchemic food preparation. In contrast to that, in North America processed food like ham, or bacon, fermented meat, cheese, from all those completely new seasonings and sauces for flavoring were developed. Then what would happen if America’s ingredients were to be cooked by Japan’s alchemist chef… such thinking was only a natural idea.

Egg dishes were a standard in America’s breakfast. There Kazuki took the challenge to learn the recipes of [eggs benedict] and [egg slate] that were the standard among celebrities.

Eggs benedict was placing ingredients like ham or bacon or vegetables and the like added with poached egg on top of a muffin, then hollandaise sauce was poured on it. Hollandaise sauce was a sauce made from butter lemon, egg yolk, and condiments, but in the present time America there were a lot of new varieties of alchemic sauce that could be added. The factor that showed the skill of the chef was the adjustment in boiling the poached egg. Making an eddy inside the pot with Psychokinesis, then dropping the egg there. In order to not have the white of the egg end up scattering, the chef needed to continuously control Psychokinesis while ascertaining the state of the egg using Extra Sense, also performing the optimum application of heat using Pyrokinesis… concerning the egg white and the egg yolk, both had different optimum heat flow condition. Among the many egg dishes, there were also chefs that claimed that poached egg was the most complete, based on theory, but a perfect poached egg couldn't be cooked without using magic. Especially in the case where poached egg was going to be placed on top of eggs benedict, in order to enjoy the egg yolk mixing with the hollandaise sauce, the egg yolk had to be cooked leniently near raw.

Egg slate was putting raw egg on top of mass potato that was put in a container and applying heat on it, adding herbs to it, and then the eater could enjoy the contrast of food texture between the syrupy soft boiled egg and the smooth and spongy mash potato, it was that kind of food. Mash potato was made by boiling the potato whole in order to not let the taste and nutrition of the potato escape, even while boiling the chef had to use Pyrokinesis to apply equal heat on the outside and inside of the potato. And then after applying the heat and the time to mash the potato came, because useless stickiness like glue came out from the destruction of the cell, magical finesse to mash the potato without destructing the cells was demanded.

The chefs of America were in a state of not noticing that these two cooking could be obsessed over in detail until this far by means of magic.

…Although Kazuki too, he was not yet as good in cooking as he had in his sword skill.

If he was able to make it successfully he was going to introduce this way to the chefs of this hotel. It was his way of returning the favor of being taught America's food culture and recipes.

Miyabi-senpai peeked at Kazuki's cooking work with deep interest. While holding down her apron's fringe.

"Although the recipe and ingredients stay American as it is, but the thorough fixation toward the detail in the process is the inherent flavor of Japanese culture isn't it?"

Shinobu-senpai was making a face as if droll could drip down at anytime.

"If Kazuki marries me or Nee-sama then I can eat this everyday… This is, love…"

"Don't see the food but look at the person itself."

Kazuki answered while baking the pancake as desert at the same time.

“I really like Kazuki.”

Shinobu-senpai brought her shoulder close to the cooking Kazuki.

“Hmph, there is no way I can share Nii-sama’s time with just liking at the degree of [really]. I like Nii-sama in the level of ultra-dynamite-gigaton-siscon.”

Kanae tried to cut in between Kazuki and Shinobu-senpai. Shinobu-senpai braced herself “gau” and resisted Kanae, both of them began a pushing game. As someone that was in the middle of cooking at their side, he wanted them to stop.

“Fufu, it’s because Shinobu was acting crabby at Kazuki before this, she’s concerned with that so she cannot honestly say that she loves him.” Miyabi-senpai pointed out from the side.

Kazuki halted his cooking and faced Shinobu-senpai.

Shinobu-senpai spoke “gau” and hugged tightly *mukyuu* at Kazuki.

It was as if she was a wild beast that expressed through action what she couldn’t say through her mouth.

Kazuki hugged back tightly. Shinobu-senpai’s body that was a little stiff released its strength and leaned on Kazuki. It was a melting reaction characteristic of girls that liked him.

Kazuki gently lifted up Shinobu-senpai’s face, and kissed her lips.

It was just a kiss like a light stamp. When their faces separated, Shinobu-senpai’s face was of someone that had been conscious of a male for the first time since she was born, an enraptured and intoxicated blushing face. A large heart mark flew at Kazuki.

”Kazuki… it’s not just a mere like but I really love you♡”

Hearing that response of a girl who only just knew love, it made Kazuki’s chest feel tightened.

“Fufu-, Kazuki, I too…”

The good-for-nothing Miyabi-senpai who did bold things even though at heart she was embarrassed, took advantage of Shinobu-senpai’s good atmosphere and touched her body at him tightly.

Kazuki also kissed Miyabi-senpai. Miyabi-senpai too was murmuring “Fufu, fufufufufufufu…happiness♡ I wonder if this is okay, for something this happy to happen to someone like me…”

Ryuutaki Miyabi—82 Ryuutaki Shinobu—82

Kanae who was trying to obstruct Shinobu-senpai was sandwiched between the twin sisters and got pushed back instead.

“Nii-sama, mumumuu—!! Even though I cannot kiss anymore since the first time—! If someday when Nii-sama can kiss me again and you don’t do it in an amazingly dramatic way then I won’t forgive Nii-sama forever—! Forever—!!” Kanae complained while hopping up and down *pyon pyon*.

The fusion of Japan-America cooking received great popularity from everyone.

Because of that Kazuki held a confidence and introduced that cooking method to the chefs of the hotel. The chefs showed an exaggerated reaction unique to Las Vegas and kept saying thanks to Kazuki a lot.

After finishing a meaningful cooking discussion with the chefs, Kazuki got out into the corridor.

Thereupon he once again unexpectedly encountered Koyuki, “puu puu puu” where she came at him pulling at his clothes’ fringe, so Kazuki flirted and caressed Koyuki for a while.

After that Kazuki went until the room of Kamimura-san and Amaterasu. There was a faulty expression to count Amaterasu as [one person], but rather than calling the room as Kamimura-san’s room alone it felt more like a [two person room].

He knocked on the door, but there was no reply.

But the magic power reaction through the bond showed that the girl was here. From the strength of the reaction that he could sense, it was not like Kamimura-san would be troubled if she was seen by Kazuki. Perhaps making this kind of judgment was too ahead of himself, still he pushed open the door.

The door felt heavier compared to the door of the other rooms.

All of a sudden a roar so loud that felt like it would blow his head off rushed into both his ears. It was a rhythmical BGM that sounded thrilling. In panic Kazuki entered inside and closed the door. This door, it was amazingly sound proof.

The inside of the room was dark, inside the darkness rainbow light was rotating round and round. On the ceiling there was a mirror ball that was cryptically rotating.

‘What’s with this room’, feeling perplexed without a shred of composure in him, Kazuki confronted even more confusion.

One surface of the wall had become a cyber screen, images that seemed like an anime’s opening was flowing. The moment he focused on the screen, he felt a feeling of immersion as if he was sucked into the image. It was an advanced alchemic image.

In the image was a character dancing matching an English song. And then under the mirror ball, Kamimura-san wearing sunglasses and also Amaterasu were singing a song that was mixed with strange sounds like “WEIIIIIIIII!” or “HYAHHAAAAA!” and the like, while dancing *ZUNDOKODOKODOKO*.

They were what were called otagei.[13] A race that Kazuki only knew existed in his knowledge.

Kamimura-san’s dancing and singing was complicatedly unskillful but pleasant to see, yet Amaterasu’s move was frighteningly hip hop. What’s with this god-sama.[14]

Kamimura-san didn’t really notice him, so Kazuki also watched her and learned the dance before participating in the moves *ZUNDOKODOKODOKO*.

When the opening image was over, the mirror ball stopped moving at the ceiling and Kamimura-san and Amaterasu stopped dancing, finally they noticed that Kazuki was just participating in the dance.

“KAZUKI!?” For some reason his name was said in English pronunciation.

“Kamimura-san when you are in high spirits is as always amazingly high spirited huh.”

After Kamimura-san temporarily stopped the image, she curled herself up in embarrassment.

“He, here I cannot see Japan’s internet or anime so I watched America’s anime…”

“Just now, that was America’s anime?”

“Due to the relation break-off with Japan the moe-otaku of America were cut off from the moe culture of Japan, so they independently developed the New American Moe-anime Culture… the painting style is a little funky but its cute enough, it also absorbed America’s characteristic dance culture so it cannot be made light of… These few days I got completely absorbed in it degozaru.”[15]

Kamimura-san hid her embarrassment by adding [gozaru] at the end of her sentence.

“What about this room? For some reason it has been turned into a terrific home theater here…”

Everyone’s rooms were also periodically remodeled by the direction of the hotelmen matching with their long stay, but this room was just too awesome by a large margin compared to the others. It was not in the realm of remodeling anymore.

It was not only the image projection, the sound too was using an audio with realness on a level that didn’t exist in Japan’s alchemic technology. It was not only things like the nonexistence of the noise, the scale of the sound field and even the sense of distance felt like he was in a live music performance.

“Hikaru said to me that money is no problem, then when I said that I like something like this the hotelman also said that it’s fine for me to remodel whatever I like and they steadily arranged vendors… I hesitated but, everyone was too pushy… when I noticed it had become like this.”

“That’s because the people here are displaying servicing mentality on the level of [I’ll show you that I can make you happy without fail] huh.”

“But amazing… it’s amazing you know, America’s culture is seriously amazing! Capitalism banzai!!”

Suddenly Kamimura-san’s tension was accelerating.

Some kind of window popped up on the wall screen. A message in English with a face shot icon of a foreigner accompanying it was floating.

Kamimura-san cut off Kazuki with words “Ah, sorry”, then without any physical interface as intermediary at all she typed an English reply with thought input. It seemed that she was doing somekind of conversation.

“Who was it just now?”

“That’s a chat friend that I created in America’s internet… the otakus of America seems like they respect Japanese people a lot as the ancestor of the moe culture, I, just from being able to speak in Japanese became greatly popular… fuhi.”

So it was something like how people who could speak old Latin in Middle Age Europe would be recognized as a person with highly refined culture. Seems like it had become a great thing for her.

{Heeey, check it out yo Kazuki! Enjoy whatcha do!?}

The Diva in the appearance of a little girl, Amaterasu’s avatar was, while doing gestures of unknown meaning she called out to him with hip hop English.

Her appearance was wearing leather jacket that was funky in America, but she was an avatar so she had no real body.

“What in the world are you saying…” His speech towards this respectable god unintentionally turned into a casual language.[16]

{Oou, soorryy… I forget Japanese language yeah, maann.}

“As the highest god of Japanese Mythology, is that really fine you…”

Leme also materialized and said that amazedly.

{Soorry, fuckin’ Lemegeton… this feeling son of a bitch. Noo fun.}

Amaterasu shrugged her shoulders exaggeratedly. “What fuckin’ Lemegeton-! You have turned into something that can only be tsukkomi-ed!” Leme lost her temper.

Leme, she was unexpectedly fixated on gods’ social standing huh.

When the mirror ball went off the room was dark so Kazuki turned on the light, after that Kamimura-san attached silver accessory on her loose clothes and put her cap facing backwards, doing the so called hip hop fashion. Kamimura-san was the one fully enjoying the American lifestyle more than anyone.

“It looks like you are fully enjoying this, however enjoying America only inside your room is somewhat wasting it, how about we go outside for a date?”

“Da, date!?” Kamimura-san shrank herself twitchingly.

There was a fact that couldn’t be forgotten.

If Kamimura-san didn’t strengthen the power of the bond with Kazuki… her existence would completely vanish.

Leading Kamimura-san who instantly turned quiet the moment she left her roomterritory, they exited the hotel.

Kazuki was wearing tailored jacket and jeans, while Kamimura-san was wearing her usual goth-loli dress. This was the original appearance of Kamimura-san that was not Americanized.

“I, is my appearance not strange?” Kamimura-san was looking for Kazuki’s reaction.

…Mio-sensei had said this to him.

Although it’s important to have a clear direction of coordination since the beginning, however if you are too consistent with it then it will look completely like cosplay so pay attention to it.

{Our stylishness in the end is something for during daily life so make allowance for that, balanced sense and the technique for taking off the clothes are important. When on a date, it’s disappointing when your partner comes wearing a too normal outfit but, just because of that it’s also troubling if they come wearing tuxedo or suits right? It’s charming in its own way, however, but it’s just too out of place in the middle of a city. That’s why it’s fine just wearing a jacket… something like that. Don’t follow your coordination completely, but step out of it a little.}

Kazuki took that advice for his current appearance, when he remembered back even at the time Mio was wearing cute fashion there were many instances where she was incorporating cool items in one aspect. That was why that time he coordinated Hikaru-senpai in mannish style he nonchalantly put cute pumps at her.

Based from that theory, Kamimura-san’s goth-loli was too complete and thorough that she overdid it.

It was not stylish in the daily life. Without doubt it was out of place in the middle of Japan’s city.

But because the person herself had the atmosphere that was removed from the society, she had the feeling of accepting her current situation. She had no out of place feeling towards her out of place outfit. Although the elf Koyuki and Miyabi-senpai also had that kind of atmosphere.

“You looks like a doll somehow, it’s cute Kamimura-san.”

When Kazuki said that, Kamimura-san smiled shyly.

“I want to become Kazuki’s doll… and then I want to get provided for my whole life and live playing around…”

“It feels like you said something cute for a moment there, but listening till the end makes me think how refreshingly a no good kid you are.”

However after saying that when he tried to think calmly, what was his own plan for the future.

He had the determination to be together with everyone forever but… how would he marry with Japan’s legislative system? Also, if he built a family together with everyone, ‘Can I earn an income that can support everyone… what’s going to happen with the children number…?’

{No, you guys are all the elite of the Knight Order so you are completely covered in that right? You are a high income earner you know.}

Leme came with telepathic communication to him amazedly from his thought of poverty.

‘…Is that so, even when we come back to Japan we won’t have to worry about the money for the future huh.’

{Rather, even though you had become the officially acknowledged King, yet you still have to worry about the future, a world too tough like that is just unpleasant… You are shouldering a great responsibility, you are fighting with your life on the line right?}

Even if he was told that, even if he didn't receive any recompense or anything, but he was only fighting for what was important for him, that was what Kazuki thought. His mother also fought without even anybody knowing about it, doing such thing.

"All right—, I'm going to get a lot of money from the government and then support Kamimura-san for sure—"

When Kazuki said that frivolously with a careless feeling, Kamimura-san went "UEEE—II!" and raised both her hands happily.

"By, by the way, where are we going?" Kamimura-san asked timidly.

Kazuki pondered. Surely it would be better for Kamimura-san to avoid places that was jammed with people…

Kazuki was in a deteriorated wasteland.

There was no one around in the surroundings that it made him feel helpless. Suddenly out of nowhere the dry wind carried the smell of gunpowder smoke and oil, and then the smell of blood.

Kazuki was shouldering a sack filled with a little rice and water, he was running madly. From behind him an engine sound could be heard that made Kazuki's spine freeze. …Those guys are coming!

When he turned back, from the other side of the horizon where there was nothing except abandoned buildings and sandstorm, there were several shadows of large specks that came in pursuit. They approached near in a blink of an eye.

Those shadows were armored vehicles and bikes that were equipped with machine guns, rocket launchers and flame throwers.

For Kazuki to be able to see them with his eyes meant that they too could confirm Kazuki by sight.

Countless sounds of firearms deafened his ear.

In order to shake off the enemy's aim Kazuki ran with all his strength while avoiding left and right. Yet his feet got entangled from fatigue. Kazuki's body that was trained using Enchant Aura shouldn't have gotten tired already just by this much, but the stamina value from the setting was feedbacked into his senses. Exactly because he originally had confidence in his stamina that he felt terror and uneasiness welling up from how his body didn't move following his thought.

A bullet grazed Kazuki's shoulder. There was no protection from the defensive magic power, blood spurted out from Kazuki's shoulder. There was no pain, but vivid sense of danger that paralyzed his brain making his mind go blank welled up. The sensation of how one should feel in this situation had been directly filled into him.

A rocket launcher impacted in a distance just slightly near him, fierce sound and blast struck his side.

Those guys were gradually shortening the distance. The bullets and launchers aim gradually became more accurate.

It was a mission to steal food and water from an evil organization, but his luck had run out from his failure of acquiring a car. Kazuki was carrying a handgun, but its accuracy was remarkably low.

…Even if he tried to Foresight those guys movement but their conduct was strangely digital so it couldn’t be Foresighted.

Of course, he also couldn’t use magic.

Kazuki was thankful that the sandstorm of the wasteland gave obstruction to their shooting. There was only one path of survival—before those guys’ bullets could accurately capture him, he could only rendezvous with his [buddy].

{HYAHHAA—! The little piggy is running away!!} {Kill! Burn!! Tonight we are going to eat meat after a long time!!!} {Don’t aim for the head okay! That’s the sweetest part after all-!} {Wait a sec, I’m going to fuck the dead body before we eat after all!!}

He could hear rough and vulgar voices mixed with the bullet sounds. His whole face was colored pure white, it was the voices of the mad clowns who dyed the area around their eyes and nose crimson with the blood of women and children. Furthermore regardless of the food shortage all the members of the outlaw were burly. Weak people were just a target to be plundered, and while they were the same human like him but he was only seen as a body to be eaten. This setting was also scary.

It was a puzzle why the enemy was using clown make-up but this aspect was also super scary.

“Are you safe, Kazuki-!?”

The voice of his buddy came from the front. Kazuki reflexively shouted.

“Kamimura-san!!”

“The current me ain’t Kamimura… it’s Jonny the Nightmare you got that!!”

The one who came from the front was a muscular black person straddling a remodeled bike. Jonny the Nightmare—his body was so big like a giant that the bike looked as if it was only a three-wheeled bicycle.

Kazuki had failed in usurping an escape method, but Kamimura-san… no, Jonny the Nightmare who was acting separately had succeeded in acquiring a bike.

Jonny rushed with terrific explosive speed and swiftly lifted Kazuki with one hand “Hold on tight on me!” before putting him on the backseat. When he followed what he had been told and clung to that sturdy back, Jonny looked back at him and grinned widely while winking. How reliable. The stupidly big face with deep chisel looked like the moai statues. The long beard that grew from the jaw was braided and tied with for some reason a red ribbon. The outward appearance was just too amazing.

Jonny made a U-turn with one hand driving while his other hand that was holding a large handgun [Elephant] was shooting the mad clowns that were approaching. Along with explosive sound that was like a bazooka, each shot accurately went straight to the armored cars and destroyed them. On the other hand the mad clowns shooting didn't even graze Jonny's erratic driving.

"Kazuki, you use the guy that is fastened in the sheet!"

Kazuki took a rifle that had excellent aiming compared to his handgun and shot. His shot missed amazingly wide. "Are you doing that on purpose!?" Jonny was disgusted watching that.

'Shit, if only I can use a katana', Kazuki thought. He put strength to his hand that was clinging at Jonny.

Kazuki usually struggled hard in order to protect everyone, but right now he was in the completely reversed position. 'Why in the world did I become like this in a virtual game', he got seriously worried inside his heart.

"Shit, how uncool."

Usually he never put any pretense but being in a position of burdening someone else made his heart unexpectedly heavy.

"…Kazuki is, usually you are always reliable and really cool you know." Jonny said in a deep voice.

"Somehow, the sensation of Kazuki hugging tightly from behind makes my heart beat fast…"

"Jonny, suddenly talking with Kamimura-san's original tone is seriously creepy. Your appearance and voice is really too Jonny-like so just stick through being Jonny."

No, he was feeling really happy about what she said to him though.

"So, sorry." Jonny was flustered and fixed his character.

[Jonny the Nightmare] was the avatar that Kamimura-san created as the player character of this game. When this game first started the player had to make the avatar of the player character.

Kazuki used the picture-taking technology and created an avatar that was exactly like himself.

And then when he dived into the virtual reality space, all of a sudden there was a macho black person standing beside him saying "My name is Jonny the Nightmare. The black shadow that traverse together with scoundrel… Come on, for the sake of everyone of the village, let's go take back the food from those guys immediately yeah." Kazuki got his back hit and he felt astonishment from the bottom of his heart. He immediately understood that it was Kamimura-san but even her voice had been reproduced into a different person so his feeling was somewhat complicated.

Rather, with how Kamimura-san was, what happened with this character setting he wonder.

Thinking from the view of this world, this Jonny's physique… was he eating human meat?

The bullets of the Elephant that was shot accurately by the powerful Jonny finally massacred all the mad clowns. But even so the blood spray or the scattered viscera were so real it felt like it would leave a trauma in him, but Kamimura-san… no, Jonny was "HYAHHAA—!" laughing enthusiastically.

He once played virtual reality bodily experience game together with Lotte at Akihabara, but Las Vegas's alchemic game was on a different level compared to Japan's.

Kazuki brought Kamimura-san to the largest entertainment arcade in Las Vegas. In Las Vegas, game centers seemed to be treated as intended for children, but despite how this place was intended for children, this realness and guro[17] was just as expected from America.

"Will the game get cleared if we keep running like this since there are no pursuers anymore?"

Kamimura-san had completely annihilated the enemies that were coming from behind in an instant.

"No, those guys are a decoy. Look, the front!" Jonny yelled. "Last boss that is worry to conclude this lovely day… The massacre symphony [Mad Orchestra]!"

From the other side of the horizon as far as the eye could see—outlaws appeared lining up in a row waiting for Kazuki and Jonny. It was clowns with scary faces with a different atmosphere than the outlaws until now.

The gentleman in a tuxedo that stood in the center… the boss of this outlaw group, Ken Kakizaki of Japanese descent swiftly raised the conductor baton that he held in one hand, seeing that the clowns all at once directed weapons that were obviously powerful from a glance and took their stance.

Against just a single bike as an opponent no matter how one thought, it was a group of overspecced weapons, but simultaneously when the conductor baton was swung down they all spouted out fire.

As if to say that flashiness is virtue, it was a dreadful first wave.

Bullets that looked like it could kill instantly in one shot were spreading out fully in front of their eyes.

"UGYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA"

Kazuki spontaneously screamed. The sight was really scary.

"Hold tight!" Jonny yelled while rushing into the middle of the storm of the massacre.

"MOTHER FUCKER!!" "SON OF A BITCH!!" "MOTHEEEEEEEEEEERR FUUUUUUUCCKK!!!"

Jonny and the countless enemies yelled American swearing at each other and opened a firefight. 'Let's stop bringing up mother please', Kazuki thought.[18]

Elephant shot to death the enemy group one after another, the shooting and explosion that flew their way gradually decreased in number. Kazuki was also recklessly shooting but everything was mostly his buddy's achievement. Their game skill was just in a too wide of a difference…!

But the moment Kazuki released a relieved sigh, under the feet of the enemy boss Kakizaki a crack was running, from there something huge was rising up.

"Th, the true last boss!" As expected, even Jonny was trembling.

What an unexpected twist, what stood at last in front of the two who thought they finally could go back to the village, was a steel giant they had to look up to to see completely—a giant robot.

“Crush them underfoot… Hell Wasteland Robo!!”

Kakizaki who rode on top of the Robo’s head was yelling. With a terrific sound of an earthquake, Kazuki instinctively despaired. With the firepower at hand, they couldn’t destroy that armor.

“Don’t give up, Kazuki! If we directly snipe Kakizaki atop the head, the Robo will also stop!!”

Jonny yelled.

“We ain’t need firepower, if it’s about accurate sniping from long distance then rather than my Elephant your rifle is better suited! I’ll clean up and evade the remaining small fry so Kazuki, you aim at that guy!”

“But… I…!”

“If you calm down and aim it will absolutely hit! In this wasteland where there is no trained technique or magic, guts and concentration is everything! Have courage, Hayashizaki Kazuki!!”

Encouraged by Jonny, Kazuki lifted his face.

When he left everything else to Jonny, it felt like everything inside this virtual reality world disappeared except for himself and the last boss. What a reliable buddy. Thank you, Jonny the Nightmare. I, will show you that I’ll answer your expectation without fail…! Kazuki stopped breathing and concentrated, he matched his aim at the demonic visage of Kakizaki who was looking down from the far height—he pulled the trigger.

“Fuuh—, play play, that was fun.”

Sitting down on the bench at the rest area as if melting down, Jonny… no, Kamimura-san was heartily gulping down a carbonated juice.

“Fuuh—, the authentic cola! It penetrated the whole body!”

“Uh, so tired…”

Kazuki also took a seat with a ‘flump’ beside her and slurped a hot lemonade. A gentle taste soaked into him.

“However Kamimura-san really has absurd guts. Jonny was seriously cool… I fell in love…”

“I, it’s just inside the game…”

Kamimura-san completely returned to her usual personality and fidgeted around.

But even so, although it was a bodily experience game, for him to get that frightened in a virtual battlefield was really unexpected even if he said so himself. Perhaps he had relied too much on the defensive magic power until now.

“That’s because, I reasonably like thrilling or horror attractions. Only if it’s attraction though.”

Kamimura-san smiled widely saying that.

…If she was like that then there was a spot that he could recommend. It was a place that he was taught of by the hotel men, though it was not a place that Kazuki wanted to go to willingly by himself.

{What is the highest architectural structure in the world?}

In the current time more than ten years since countries had cut off diplomatic relations from other countries, the answer to a such question was not clearly known.

But under their faith towards Mythology many countries had their civilization retrogressed or possibly stagnated, taking such thing into account he could make a conjecture that the answer could possible be this place.

Hotel Yggdrasil that supported the ceiling at the center of Las Vegas city.

Part of the building that was used as a hotel was 170 floor that reached the height of 1000 meters, but actually the height of this building still went much higher. Its official name was Neo Stratosphere Tower. Its height was actually 3000 meters.

Still a 3000 meter building was nothing more than a checkpoint with America's current technology. It seemed currently there were several construction projects in progress building 4000, 5000 meter mega towers.

Rather than calling Neo Stratosphere Tower aiming for height, it was only built because of the pressing need for a dome city pillar.

But what was crazy from this Neo Stratosphere Tower was not its height.

It was the thrill ride that existed on its highest floor.

"A, amazing… Kazuki, let's go there!" Kamimura-san's eyes shined madly.

Kazuki and Kamimura-san temporarily returned to the familiar hotel Yggdrasil and boarded the special elevator that went to the highest floor that they had never went to until now.

They could see outside from the elevator because the whole surface was fixed with transparent panel. It was as if they were sucked to the ceiling, both of them passed through the clouds and kept rising.

"…The cloud is not a vision projected at the ceiling but a real one inside the dome huh. Is it an artificial cloud?"

When Kazuki said that in amazement, Kamimura-san also said "Certainly" and got absorbed in looking at the outside scenery. What an amazing technology. He heard before that the change in the sky from the morning until the night was an artificial projected vision, so he thought that the cloud too was just a projected image.

At the highest floor they finally arrived at, there was a prop in the center that supported the dome. Other than that, they could see a rooftop without walls in a glance. But when they looked carefully, it was just that the walls in all four directions were made from transparent panels. If it was really a rooftop than there should be strong wind blowing.

At the far corner of the open floor, four types of thrill rides were really installed. Several guests were making queue. Although it seemed for the local citizen of Las Vegas it was not a fresh attraction so the number of people couldn’t be said as a big crowd.

The construction was arranged so that after entering each entrance to the thrill machine they would be rushed out outside the transparent panel. Jet coaster, free fall, trapeze, and ferris wheel, those were the four.

“First is the jet coaster…” Kamimura-san said with a small voice but filled with passion inside.

“Isn’t it better to start with something like the ferris wheel first I wonder?”

“Choosing that one from the options feels like running away!”

Is it like that…? While Kazuki lost his nerve somewhat, he linked hands with Kamimura-san and lined up at the queue.

When looking from nearby he confirmed a dreadful fact. All parts of the jet coaster were made using transparent acrylic material including the train and the rail. He guessed that the transparency and intensity of the material was increased by alchemy, looking at a glance the visitor that was riding the coaster looked like they were floating in the air.

Imagining the sensation of floating 3000 meter in the sky, Kazuki felt like his groin shrank.

Of course he possessed defensive magic power so even if he fell from this height he thought there would be no problem and he could endure it, if something happened he could also use Summoning Magic to fly in the sky but… that was that and this was this, fearing height was something instinctual. However Kamimura-san was leaking out “oooo—” a voice of admiration.

It seemed rather than getting scared she was directing her interest at the technology and conception.

“Kamimura-san, before weren’t you scared of heights…”

There was that time when Kazuki brought back Kamimura-san and Kazuha-senpai from Ise Imperial Shrine using Blazing Wings to fly in the sky.

“That time, that was because Kazuki hurled me away from the sky to the ground… If it’s this kind of attraction then it’s fine. After all I know that it’s safe no matter how scary it is.”

“…I wonder, maybe I don’t have the feeling that it’s safe just because it’s an attraction.”

Kazuki remembered the wasteland just now where he was seriously scared and murmured.

“Fufu-“ Some kind of laugh spilled out from Kamimura-san. “Even though Kazuki isn’t even afraid of confronting reality, you are scared of virtual reality and attractions. Both of us, are polar opposites aren’t we?”

“Why is that? Of course there are also times that I enjoy thrill though.”

“I think that‘s because Kazuki has the force of will to look straight at the truth inside yourself. But at virtual reality and attraction, there is nothing but fiction even if you look right from the front.”

Kamimura-san unusually conversed talkatively about her own thinking outside of her otaku knowledge.

“I’m the opposite. All this time I’m scared of reality and run away, into the world of fiction. Internet information and game guides, even without I myself doing anything I can obtain a feeling of omnipotence. …Something like this is the same like religion isn’t it?”

“Religion?”

What came to mind was Arthur and Beatrix… the people of the Mythology countries.

“Perhaps someone like Arthur is also not scared of the game world and the attraction machines. After all perhaps he can also discover the will of god even inside a game machine. Also something else. I always thought this all this time but… I hate people that have faith in Mythology.”

Kamimura-san asserted her disgust so clearly it made him a little surprised.

“[The god that I believe in says this, so this is the world’s truth], someone that can say something like that and then attack other people, they are on the same level with the shut-in that swallows whole the internet information and then starts a flame war in the board. …That time when the old era ended, religious terrorism occurred frequently with poverty as the cause, but I have the feeling that the current world is the expansion of that…”

‘What is flame war?’

Fiction. Kamimura-san boldly declared that Mythology was fiction.

“Kazuki who properly looks straight at reality is cool… that’s what I thought all this time. Though it makes me feel that I’m pathetic and want to die.”

Kamimura-san looked down and lowered her voice frailly while continuing her words in a mumble.

“I… like Kazuki. I too want to become strong and positive together with Kazuki… and fight the people that do whatever they are told by the Mythology.”

“I think you are already someone that can become strong and positive enough Kamimura-san.”

Recognizing one’s own weakness was not something a weak human could do.

“That’s because Kazuki supported me.”

“Of course I’ll keep doing that from now on too.”

An avatar of a key floated up from Kamimura-san and it was absorbed into Kazuki’s stigmata.

Kamimura Itsuki—65

At that point the queue moved… finally their turn had come.

With the transparent rail and coaster entering his eyes more and more, Kazuki gulped his saliva audibly *gokuri*.

The scenery from 3000 meters above the ground could be seen from beyond the transparent panel. There was the sky right under them. The horizon formed a curve, it was a sight that was almost like looking down at earth from space.

He could faintly see a super miniature size Las Vegas from inside a blue crystal ball.

The American worker gave them the signal to enter. However Kazuki couldn’t think of the contraption in front of him as anything other than a large scale jumping suicide. While he was hesitating, Kamimura-san jumped into the transparent machine with “Eii-“. He couldn’t see anything other than Kamimura-san doing an air-chair in the sky.

Looking at Kazuki who was turning blue from fear, Kamimura-san chuckled and offered her hand while saying “Here-“.

Kazuki took that hand and timidly stepped his foot, then he sat.

‘Ooh, I’m sitting in the air!’ The transparent coaster began to slide above the rail without any sound.

“…By the way right now Kamimura-san is supporting me… thanks Jonny.”

“Fufufu, anytime. Come hell or high water I’m gonna hold you tight.”

Kamimura-san talked in Jonny’s tone still with her cute natural voice.

Kazuki held tightly on that small hand. He was seriously scared.

- kata-* A slight sound could be heard—the coaster lurched down sharply.

The coaster slid down with terrific acceleration through height 3000 meters.

“UGYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!”

Kazuki yelled. When he thought that the coaster took a nose dive, without decelerating at all the coaster was curving violently at a spot where he could see nothing except empty air. Kazuki further noticed a new terrifying fact. In this transparent jet coaster he couldn’t see the rail well so he wouldn’t be able to guess what was going to happen next.

“NGYOEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE-!!”

Voice that had never came out until now overflowed from his throat.

“AHAHAHAHAHA!!” Kamimura-san laughed foolishly. “Amazing amazing, the city can be seen now!”

Hearing Kamimura-san’s word Kazuki recovered his composure to look around his surroundings. Perhaps they had descended down until the 1000 meter height, the transparent coaster was gliding as if sewing through Las Vegas’s high-rise hotels and buildings that were standing close together. There the coaster dropped in speed as if to make the passenger enjoy the scenery.

The sky drive of super huge city Las Vegas—it was a moving view.

…And so during such unpreparedness the coaster took a nose dive again. Kazuki once again screamed “ANGYAAAAAAAAAAAAA”.

After doing a heavy rotation of coaster, free fall, and trapeze, before long the time where the sun was setting had come. Of course it was nothing more than the sky of the dome emitting orange light, but the beauty was not losing to the original natural phenomenon.

The two of them boarded the ferris wheel for the last to bring an end for the date.

The gondola of the ferris wheel was not transparent. It was only this attraction that was not meant to enjoy thrill.

There were two seats that faced each other inside the gondola, but Kamimura-san was sitting beside Kazuki. Because in the first place the seat was American-sized and Kamimura-san had a small stature, there was still extra space left with the two of them sitting sticking at each other.

The orange light that shone in painted Kamimura-san's side face. She was a transient beautiful girl when she was quiet. However "Hah-!? This situation!" she opened her mouth for some reason.

"Ferris wheel in the twilight as the end of the date… there is no mistake this is the premonition for an erotic scene! In eroge terms!"

"I'm not going to do anything Kamimura-san dislikes you know." Kazuki smiled wryly while embracing her shoulder closer.

In other words if Kamimura-san didn't dislike it he would do it. After all Kamimura-san was cute.

Kamimura-san languidly leaned on Kazuki's shoulder while talking in a small voice.

"It's a little scary but… I want to try it a bit. I want to be desired by Kazuki…"

Kazuki raised Kamimura-san's face that was leaning on his shoulder, and touched his lips on her cheek. With a puff Kamimura-san's face reddened and "Auu…" she fidgeted while leaking out a really small voice.

"Kamimura-san is a far cuter girl than you yourself imagine so don't be scared."

Kazuki whispered so right from his heart, and then he wanted Kamimura-san.

But—he was lost of how to take off the goth-loli dress. There was a lot of frill, a lot of ribbon, fabric overlapping, he couldn't find the button. He didn't understand what he should do, but Kamimura-san was "Kazuki…", she was anticipating Kazuki's next action with her heart beating fast.

With a hand movement as if opening a lock of a cute jewel box, Kazuki first untied the black ribbon on her neck. When her neck lay exposed, at her blouse where many frills were overlapping he discovered small buttons hidden in the structure of the inner part of those frills. He unfastened those buttons one by one, and when he laid bare the blouse, a lustrous white skin and breasts that undulated gently were exposed.

"Ah-…" Kamimura-san twisted her body shyly.

The blouse was obstructed by the pinafore dress that she wore when he reached her stomach and he couldn't undress her till the end. But on the contrary with only her breast exposed she became a lascivious figure.

"You, don't wear a bra."

"It, it's not too big after all…"

Certainly that bulge was meager. However that gentle sloping had a loveliness that made him want to rub his cheek on it. When he caressed her breasts rather than rubbing them, Kamimura-san was trembling in shivers until that much. When he poked, that pink flower bud swelled out. When he pinched and tickled them, the girl reacted excessively with a large voice "Ahn-!"

When he tickled and strengthened his stimulation "Ah…yaa-…!" her body twisted oversensitively.

Heart marks flew at him. She was not feeling pain.

"The breast is really sensitive isn't it?" Kazuki was thoroughly fascinated by the small breast.

"I, I always touch them myself so… its development has been finished…"

Kazuki was slightly surprised. He recalled the figure of Kazuha-senpai this morning, but Kamimura-san's body was far more immature and ephemeral than Kazuha-senpai so there was a big gap of her and that kind of conduct.

"Because, I thought that a person who will fall in love with me won't appear for eternity so… I thought that I have no choice but to master things that feels good with my own hand… gro, gross isn't it?"

"No, your reaction is so sensitive that it's really lovely Kamimura-san."

Kazuki suddenly sucked the flower bud. It was a degenerate act as if seeking motherhood at the unripe breast.

"AAAAAAAAAAAA-!" Yelling with a high-pitched voice like a strained bowstring being plucked, Kamimura-san was fiercely trembling. When he licked with his tongue and flicked "Nnnn-…♡" she was further trembling further with long reverberation.

"Just now, only from your breast?"

Kamimura-san nodded up and down with a rough breathing.

'What a lovely small breast' Kazuki thought. It was pure even though it had finished developed—worthy of a [gothic Lolita], there was the young girliness and decadence contrasting each other there. Even though it was a breast that looked flat like a chopping board, the buds that had been regularly played around by herself were gradually swelling out bigger. Kazuki sucked at it as if looking for mother's milk. Kamimura-san writhed from the pleasure that came only from her breast. Her knees were squirming. Kazuki's empty right groped at her skirt. The skirt that airily expanded was supported by the inner skirt inside. When he groped at the inner skirt that was made up of light chiffon-like fabrics overlapping, he found the ephemerally thin thigh. Her crotch was wrapped in drawers in trousers shape of thin cloth, but the center part was drenched wet.

When he thought about Kamimura-san's frailness and timid personality, he couldn't treat her roughly. With a hand movement like caressing the surface of a jewel, Kazuki crawled his palm on her drawers.

"Haa, haa, it's gentle… Kazuki's hand manner is just too gentlemanly…♡"

An ecstatic and drunk voice. The important place that was strictly hidden by a lot of frills was like an elegant jewel box, but Kazuki immediately found a girl’s most sensitive seed across the drawers and he pressed with his fingertip.

“AAAAAAA-♡”

Kamimura-san’s immature body jumped violently again. Wet stain spread out through her drawers gradually. Her reaction was too sensitive, for some reason it felt like he was making a performance with a musical instrument. She was a girl that received all 100% and returned a reaction of 120%.

“Haa, haa… getting attacked by riajuu[19] handsome guy, feeling good, it feels like a dream that my head turns strange…

Kamimura-san talked even with her gasping.

“I don’t think that I’m a riajuu handsome guy, but even if Kamimura-san’s charm is exposed to other lady killer I absolutely don’t want Kamimura-san to be stolen from me. I want to make Kamimura-san belong only to me.”

Being driven by desires to monopolize and conquer, Kazuki stimulated Kamimura-san’s body gently yet persistently. *kuchu kuchu kuchu*…sounds echoed with a uniform pace. Kamimura-san’s body that was immature yet developed was constantly convulsing *gaku gaku* unstoppably, the focus of her eyes couldn’t settle down. She breathed heavily, “aah—♡, aah—♡”Moaning like that, a line of saliva drooped down from her mouth.

The ferris wheel that turned in a circle at the height of 3000 meter was absurdly large. There was still some way to go before the gondola finished moving a full revolution. Until that time, this priceless doll dressed in a dress that was like a jewel box that could be taken off, how far could he make her reach the height of carnality, he wondered.

When the time came to descend down from the gondola at last, Kamimura-san was in a state of half-fainting.

Kazuki carried the girl in a princess carry and got off the gondola. Even her weight that was limp on his hands was lovely, making him feel like doing something real to her.

However even if he said so himself but his desire was an inexhaustible thing. His feeling of love towards everyone absolutely wouldn’t wither, but for him to be approached by everyone boldly everyday in this way, if he continued to respond to them, he had the hunch that it would be strange if his desire toward this girl didn’t wither.

However when Kazuki calmly thought back, even he himself was mysteriously responding in high spirits.

If he descended down from the Neo Stratosphere Tower using elevator to the lower level it directly connected to the hotel Yggdrasil, but he felt awkward to bring back Kamimura-san with her condition still like this. Kazuki descended to the first floor and went out through the back door and exited to the courtyard.

Finding a convenient bench he laid down Kamimura-san and sat down himself to give her a lap pillow. The sky gradually turned dark and the light of the stars was starting to twinkle. For a time Kazuki‘s eyes were stolen by that real light.

He once again thought that he quite liked this city.

He absolutely couldn’t tolerate the slave capitalism that ran rampant in the hidden side of this country. But the ultimate artificial city Las Vegas and its citizen devoted their whole power using every ability available to make people happy on an absurd scale. Of course the wealth that supported this great merry-making was produced by means of the slaves’ effort but… as he thought the way of this city itself was really an [utopia].

Indian. There was an enemy that tried to destroy this…

The nature was also precious, but the artificial civilization was also precious. If the preciousness of nature was to love the earth, then the preciousness of artificial was to love other people.

{Excuse me, is there something wrong with your companion?}

Kazuki suddenly heard someone talking to him in English and when he lifted his head, there was a female wearing a blue cap in uniform standing in front of him. One of her hand was carrying a large machine that seemed like a vacuum cleaner.

However her polite tone as if treating a precious stone, she was not a cleaner but a hotel-keeper.

{No, she was just too hyped up a little but she is fine. She had too much fun.}

When Kazuki replied in English, the female hotel-keeper leaked out a refined chuckle “fufu-“ that sounded like a broadleaf rubbing against wind.

{Las Vegas is our pride, so by any means please bring home the greatest memory from here back to Japan, honored guest.}

Even leaving out her status as a hotel-keeper, she was a good person.

She was wearing unfashionable clothes and her hair was roughly bundled, but looking at her carefully her looks were beautiful and her hair was also dazzlingly blond. However when he looked up she was fairly tall and when her refined smile was cleared away she might be a female with quite an intensity.

{However, for you honored guest to come to the rear garden right now is a little embarrassing. The truth is all the conspicuous place has been finished tidied up, but there is still a place like this side where we haven’t reached yet.}

When he looked around, here and there in this courtyard there was still mark of the flood damage. Kazuki’s heart felt slightly painful looking at the expression of the female hotel-keeper who looked apologetic from the bottom of her heart.

{Is it the damage from the heavy rain before this?} He asked in English.

The culprit that made the rain come was Kazuki himself.

{Correct. Such heavy rain had never happened in history, a really strange occurrence, but nevertheless it was really inexcusable for such a thing to happen in the middle of honored guest’s stay… how did honored customer spend your time at that time?}

Suddenly the female hotel-keeper’s eyes felt like it was shining. Perhaps it was just his feeling.

But his good impression toward the hotel-keeper was turned inside out instinctually in his mind.

It was a conversation with a natural flow, but some kind of strange chill ran through him.

He had to be cautious in his reply. The thing he could say, the thing he couldn’t say, thing he should lie about, lie that would certainly be exposed if he uttered, it would be bad if he didn’t affirm all of those.

{Actually I went together with the people that evacuated at that time and went outside the dome. I also looked forward of trying to see the outside of Las Vegas.}

For an instant, he hesitated whether to state that he headed to the slum city. That was a fact that implied the possibility of Kazuki harboring disgust at the slave trade.

But, Mary had likely informed the fact that Kazuki explored the slum city to the government. Mary at that time was still not Kazuki’s ally yet.

{Aah, I see. After looking around outside the dome, for the sake of knowing about the Indians, honored customer crossed over to South America I heard.}

Was that story circulated even until the normal hotel-keeper?

{And then you kindly decided to ally yourself with us rather than the Indians and returned back to this hotel didn’t you?}

{Right, of course.} Kazuki returned a friendly smile. It was the only reasonable answer.

The hotel-keeper chuckled.

{However was it not difficult, to go to the place of the Indians once and then sneaking away back to this side?}

{That was easy. After all they also respected our will about which side we plan to ally ourselves with.}

{Will. Will, that’s something important. After all we are fighting each other with our ideology confronting the other. However the South America… we too hadn’t crossed to the other side of the Colorado river for many years already all this time. How nostalgic… going there and returning here, what kind of path was it that honored guest followed?}

‘We didn’t go out of our way at all you know’, Kazuki was having cold sweat inside his heart.

If he mistaken his reply, Kazuki and the others’ destruction of the soul battery factory of the slaves would be exposed.

In order to not reveal their deed he needed to instantly recall to his mind the map of America. The tall female hotel-keeper was looking down straight at Kazuki’s eyes fixedly.

{From Colorado river we went far to the east perhaps, when we arrived at the place where the ravine turned steep we turned to the north, then we were guided to the community around Grand Canyon. Our path back was also the same.}

{My, then did honored guest take a look at the beautiful Lake Mead at your way back? My origin is from around there.}

Kazuki who was imagining the map almost said that he saw the lake, no, he noticed that he couldn't reply that there was no lake when he imagined the map in his mind. Why was that…

{Lake? We walked along Colorado river but, is there something like lake there?}

{Aah, I see, Colorado river is big so just walking alongside it, you won't be able to make the distinction between the river and the lake won't you honored guest?}

Just now wasn't she obviously trying to trap him in a nasty way? Was he thinking too much?

"Uu~nn" At that time Kamimura-san's body stirred. Kazuki called out to her "Kamimura-san, are you okay?" with a feeling as if he found Buddha inside hell.

"No problemo…" Kamimura-san opened her eyes while mumbling incomprehensibly.

{Looks like she has woken up. She said that she is fine.}

{My, what a curious Japanese.}

{It's already this time, we are going back to our room.}

{Oh my, I'm sorry to keep you for long. Still it's a honor to meet with our important guest. Well then, enjoy America.}

After elegantly nodding and bowing, the female house-keeper left. Kazuki felt relieved from the bottom of his heart.

"Kamimura-san, let's go back to our room." Saying that, he urged Kamimura-san to go back.

Part 8

“Kazuki-oniisan! Even with little girl heroine getting praised extravagantly, whether now or in the past the deredere sexy but cute breast heroine is monopolizing the popularity of the business world, but even Lolita can be loved! Yes for Lolita! After all, as long as there is love it’s not a crime desu!”

The night of that day, while Kazuki was sitting on the bed of his own room, the door opened vigorously and Lotte jumped inside like a playful doggy.

Kazuki didn’t make any resistance when Lotte pushed him down and both of them lied on top of each other on the bed.

She was not wearing her usual cartoon character pajama, but a silk baby doll. It was a little sexy from its see-through quality.

“What is it Lotte, so suddenly. Even if there is love, but a crime is still a crime I think.”

“Like how tannin slowly fermented abundant wine, like how leather with no unnecessary craftsmanship performed to it is naturally dyed through human life, rather than breast that has been already completed, isn’t enjoying the changeaging of the tiny breast that is made to grow by your own hands the pleasure of being an adult desu? In other words, a man who is not a lolicon is a boring man…”

While Lotte was saying something unreasonable with a tone of voice that had a bitterness in it, she got on top of Kazuki with both her legs kicking around.

“I understand what you want to say but it’s not like Lotte is a loli right? Your age only has a year difference from me.”

“Bad! I have poor growth desu!”

“No, even if you say that while puffing your chest…”

“If Kazuki-oniisan doesn’t get affectionate with me, my female hormones will stay as a bud and it won’t bloom desu! In other words, please do perverted things to me!”

A Lotte that was coming, demanding for perverted things was also cute, isn’t she.

When Kazuki rubbed Lotte’s head, Lotte went “Please don’t rub my head desu~” and shook her neck left and right. In that case, Kazuki rubbed Lotte’s breasts.

It was a gently-sloping bulge, like a rustling desert slightly piling up sand due to the wind.

Lotte was startled from the surprise stimulation. Even that Lotte would tremble from a perverted sensation like this. His heart was also made to beat fast from the fact that he himself would be the one to habitually develop Lotte's immature body that was similar to Kamimura-san, but for Lotte who was more purely innocent like an angel to be developed by his own hands, making her tremble in pleasure, it made him feel the gap and a feeling of immorality even more.

"Lotte! When doing something perverted to a loli, the gap and the immorality are priceless!!"

"So you understand, Kazuki-oniisan! That's the taste of an adult desu!!"

Is that right?

He thought that she was only talking in a mostly nonsensical mood.

"Incidentally Kazuki-oniisan, recently, did you feel any change in your own body desu?"

Change? For a moment Kazuki pondered what was Lotte talking about, but something immediately came to mind and he went 'hah' in realization.

Looking at his expression, Lotte considered it as a yes and continued her story.

"Even how I become a personification of eros and approaching Kazuki-oniisan, there is a reason for that desu."

Rather than calling her a personification of eros, more like she had become a real idiot kid.

There was no denying it even if he said that she had reached the same level as Kanae who varnished over things with tension and momentum.

Lotte liked anime and manga, but she avoided those that had extreme scenes in them thinking that "I'll get this done to me adultly from Kazuki-oniisan". She was a serious child.

That was why even when she approached him boldly she didn't actually understand the real thing and the mood turned like a gag manga.

"And the reason of this perverted approach?"

"I can feel a change in Kazuki-oniisan's mind desu. It's just a vague thing, but when oniisan flirted with a girl and got satisfied, the libido that should have been worn out looked as if it was recovered in super speed."

"Super speed of libido recovery? …You mean I'm turning into a monster of sexual desire?"

But these few days, certainly had actually felt something like that.

"The upper limit of the libido itself is not increasing, so Kazuki-oniisan is not turning into a beast that keeps hungering for girls desu. It's just the recovery strength that is high, so no matter how much you do it you won't become tired of a girl. In short it's like onii-san's [sage time[20] is becoming zero] desu."

No matter how much one eats but the stomach wouldn't get full, so one could eat tasty things forever, perhaps it was something like that. That was something that was absurdly luxurious but… how did he turn up like this?

"It's just a guess but Kazuki-oniisan is surrounded by magic power possessors of the greatest class in Japan and is loved by them. If the strong wish of those female magicians is constantly exposed to Kazuki-oniisan as unconscious magic… even if such a change resulted from that it might not be strange at all, isn't it desu."

Kazuki was shared among ten-odd girls. All of those girls wanted to stay together with Kazuki for even a little longer, wishing for a lot of the share, it was not his hubris but a fact. And then if the wish of those girls became a magic…

Having his mind remodeled one-sidedly was not a grotesque story. Rather if Kazuki had a mentality that rejected that, surely that subtle magic would be repelled by his defensive magic power. But Kazuki himself accepted that, he was thinking that he wanted to become like that in his deep psyche and because of that a result like this was produced.

It didn't hurt anyone. The truth was, his feeling of happiness recently was not something superficial. He turned into someone that could love everyone infinitely.

…And that was Lotte's reason for approaching him.

"That's why please flirt with me too more-!"

Lotte who was too able in detecting everyone's feeling was being reserved until now.

But right now she thought that such reservations were already unnecessary.

"Right… it's a situation that even Leme didn't foresee, but Leme thinks that Lotte's hypothesis is spot on."

Beside Kazuki and Lotte who were lying on top of each other on the bed, Leme also materialized and clung at Kazuki. Leme had turned into the same stature and breast size similar to Lotte as if they were twin sisters.

"Being surrounded by the best female magicians of the present generation and being awakened towards matchless sexual stamina, that's exactly just like the saying that [a good woman will polish a man]!"

"Don't say something like matchless, it sounds bad hearing that…"

"That's a happy thing for a woman you know! Then Leme too won't act reserved against the other conquering target women. It's no problem for Leme to participate in the intimate act!"

Leme also snuggled up to Kazuki. …The white and brown tiny breasts were sandwiching and rubbing against him.

Certainly, in this day Kazuki had repeated this experience who knows how many times, but even in this moment he was conscious of how fired up he was.

"Leme-oneesan, let's give Kazuki-oniisan an idea of loli's charm desu!"

"No, the age of Leme's external appearance can be changed freely though."

Leme's body was wrapped in magic power…*BOIN!* her body grew. Her limbs turned longer all of a sudden, her figure turned voluptuous, and her breast *purun!* sprang up growing bigger.

Being betrayed, *gaa—nn!* Lotte's body was trembling.

“Kazuki-oniisan, that’s a fake desu! You mustn’t get deceived by that kind of imitation breast!!”

“Fufufu, Lotte’s spoiled attitude is still too childish. Leme will show you an example… like this!”

Leme’s middle-eastern clothing quietly melted into the air, turning stark naked. And then she brought her face near in a straight line and suddenly kissed Kazuki. Leme’s bewitching long tongue licked and invaded into the mouth of Kazuki, violating the inside, caressing the gums of Kazuki’s mouth, and then entangled her tongue with Kazuki’s.

Kazuki was trembling in shivers. At the same time Leme’s thin fingers stroked Kazuki’s nape of the neck, *tsuu—* tracing toward Kazuki’s chest. Even a man would shudder when his body was caressed lovingly.

Ooo… Lotte was honestly admiring the sight while observing that woman’s wiles.

Leme was tasting the inside of Kazuki’s mouth slurpingly to her heart content and then in the end as if to suck Kazuki’s saliva *chuu—* she vacuumed with her mouth, *chupa!* then she separated their mouth with a light sound.

“Fufufu, how’s that, Leme’s technique? Leme is not existing for so long just for show. …Well, at most Leme just learned them as knowledge but this is the first time Leme practiced them for real though. These many months and years possessing my own ego, Hibiki was also the same sex with me, someone who I thought of doing this kind of thing with is only my master… just Kazuki after all♡ Leme is not going to hold herself back anymore♡”

Looking at the smiling Leme with her naked dark brown body bending back and forth like a snake and her cheek slightly colored red, made Kazuki’s heart beat hard. Throughout her long life she was thinking of only one person with whom she would do something like this… that was quiet an excellent pick-up line.

“A great persuasive power that cannot be said by anybody except someone with lolibaba[21] attribute…!” Lotte too was filled with admiration on the side.

“Who are you saying an old woman-!” Leme reluctantly talked back hearing that.

“But me too… I don’t know of any other man than Kazuki-oniisan, but anyway I absolutely, absolutely like Kazuki-oniisan the most in the world desu-!!”

Lotte too took off the baby doll that she wore and exposed her springy white naked body that made one feel a taboo.

And then as if to steal him from Leme, she hugged Kazuki and kissed him. Lotte’s somewhat short tongue was clumsily being loving inside Kazuki’s mouth.

In order to answer that courage Kazuki also reached out his tongue and entangled Lotte’s tongue with his.

- kuchu kuchu* Both of them were frolicking with each other wholeheartedly leaking out watery sounds.

At the same time Kazuki caressed Lotte’s breast. Just like how Leme lovingly caressed Kazuki just now, Kazuki caressed Lotte lovingly. Lotte’s gently-sloping bulge was trembling in shudders, her flower buds were sharpening.

At that moment the trousers of Kazuki’s pajama was lowered down slidingly. And then Leme chuckled “Fuufufu~!♡” while poking at Kazuki’s hot thing that felt like it was boiling.

Kazuki didn’t mind that and concentrated on loving Lotte.

“Kazuki-oniisan… please make me feel even better…” Lotte blushed with an ecstatic face pleading to him. When Kazuki inserted his hand between Lotte’s slender thighs, the pure angel had already been sticky there from sexual excitement. Kazuki was dyeing Lotte’s pure white with his own color.

At the same time the seething passion of Kazuki’s lower body was held fast deep inside Leme’s mouth. Her long tongue enveloped with saliva was mercilessly sliding over rubbing him, sucking over and over *chuu chuu*, fervently tormenting him in great persistence. It was as if his core of pleasure was directly constricted.

It felt somewhat vexing to be made felt good one-sidedly by Leme, while thinking of things like that, he threw all of that feeling to make Lotte who was in front of his eyes feel good. Lotte raised a lovely voice like an angel and trembled from the pleasure that Kazuki brought about.

While a strange position of power was formed, the three people entangled their naked flesh with each other until late at night.

Passion overflowed endlessly from Kazuki’s heart, he continued using up all his strength satisfying the two girls.

Translator's Notes and References

1. ↑ Italia’s Earth and Blue Sky
2. ↑ i.e. : (┛◉Д◉)┛□┻━┻)
3. ↑ There is a play of the word tsundere here. *tsun tsun* is the sound effect of poking at something, but the word ‘tsun’ could also be used to describe being cold to someone, combined with ‘dere dere’ which means warming up or being lovestruck to someone, certainly Mio in the imagination above is being a tsundere in a different meaning.
4. ↑ Most Likely referring to Louis from Zero no Tsukaima here…
5. ↑ A Japanese proverb, making a dull sword look sharp even though it’s actually unusable.
6. ↑ Don’t know how to translate the joke here. In Japanese there is the proverb of ‘the string of the patience bag/sack is snapped’ which means out of patience. Hikaru exchanged the patience bag with testicle sack, the Japanese words for these two sound a little similar.
7. ↑ That’s how you call all-you-can-eat buffet in Japan
8. ↑ Manzai is a two person comedy act
9. ↑ Don’t know what is this bell one. Might be some show in Japan.
10. ↑ Might be reference to something. Don’t know what though.
11. ↑ I guess even she doesn’t believe Arthur is a man
12. ↑ Ukemi, the art of falling down safely.
13. ↑ Type of fan that yells and dances at concerts.
14. ↑ To imagine how Amaterasu dance, try this video http://www.nicovideo.jp/watch/sm27735757?ref=search_tag_video, or search dance video with this word □□□□□. The katakana just now means sharp-sharp
15. ↑ An extremely polite expression, usually only used by people of low status.
16. ↑ Usually Kazuki used polite language to converse with Amaterasu
17. ↑ Grotesque
18. ↑ Well said
19. ↑ Riajuu (short for “riaru juujitsu”) Typically used in fandom circles as the opposite of an otaku, or simply meaning “everybody

else”. The underlying notion is “someone who is interested in real things and has a successful social life”.

20. ↑ Sage time, the period after orgasm when a man is free from sexual desire and can think clearly.
21. ↑ Lolibaba, loli=young girl, baba=old woman, which mean a girl who was really really old yet had the appearance of a young girl.

Chapter 2 – Weak Person’s Blame(Black is the Color)

Part 1

Kazuki saw a strange dream.

The dream had a vivid realism even more than the virtual reality that he had experienced with Kamimura-san—as if he was synchronized with someone’s memory.

In reality, the dream made him think that it might be a past of sometime somewhere. No, he was convinced.

There were mountains of rubble as far as his eyes could see.

The perpetrator that brought about this destruction, that was as if it was done by a large monster, had already received damage to the degree that he almost entered magic intoxication, while feeling the sensation of the rough rubble at his back, he collapsed spread-eagled.

While that man was lying spread-eagled—he was looking up at the opponent that had beaten up himself.

A high-statured woman that stood tall. A smart black suit. Long reaching blonde hair that beautifully and fiercely made one think of a lion’s mane. Backing the light, her face was mostly unseen.

The ferocious blonde haired woman was looking down his way while talking.

“It’s my first job since I became King but, defeating an old friend like you who was like my older brother is… karma isn’t it, Red Metallica.”

She still looked young but the echo of her voice was deep.

“Kill me…” The fallen down man—Red answered like that.

“Before I become someone that is not me, kill me, Clark. My head is already in pieces.”

“Don’t say such a pathetic thing, aniki.” (TN: Elder brother, or older man.)

He couldn’t see well because of the backlighting but, he was certain that this woman who was called Clark was having a crisp smile.

“Let’s reminisce a little yeah.” The tone of the woman turned just a little familiar.

“…Both of us were supposed to be two people who didn’t have a common ground at all. I was a street child in the slums without any parents, that lived my days merely stealing randomly. You were the son of a distinguished owner of an Indian casino. But the Indian you felt doubt towards the identity you were born with and came to the streets. And then you and I met. For us to strangely hit it off when we tried talking to each other, that was truly a mysterious happening but… however that rotten bond didn’t continue long, I didn’t even go to school and became a gang member, and you graduated from an elite university before joining a large company at Silicon Valley… both of us becoming estranged from each other was only the natural course of events.” (TN: The rotten bond, in Japan meant an undesirable but inseparable relationship)

A tone that spoke of the past affectionately. Red lent his ears toward her talk with a gentle feeling.

“But why in the world did it become like this? In this reunion after several years I am the [King], and you… an illegal magician. This is really karma.”

“…Hearing your nostalgic voice, just for an instant, it feels like I returned to the past.”

Red talked with a hoarse voice.

“But as expected I’m at my limit already. Kill me. I was doing something like this is in no way the result of <Baron Samedi>’s manipulation. In reality there was my will in that action. It was something I did with my own will in it.”

“Kidnapping white girls of very young age then using the company’s facility to repeat human experiments and then you slaughtered them wholesale… if you said that this is your own will then certainly you really are an excellent serial killer. The present time Blue Beard(Gilles de Rais).”

“…To make the sweet unification with Diva to last eternally, a mechanical body that can endure against the Diva’s encroachment and a mind expanded by pharmaceutics are necessary. If the remodeling to those girls goes well… I plan to perform the operation on myself for remodeling, but… unfortunately…”

“The modus operandi of your kidnapping was turning rougher and rougher day by day. And then finally, the authorities exposed you, where you rampaged and destroyed the city. Look around you, the splendid company headquarters where you worked at now isn’t even a shadow of itself. Did you want power that much, aniki.”

“I wanted it, really wanted it.”

“Even though without contracting with something like a Diva, you were already a human of the elite side.”

“All along I was far weaker than even a pauper like you. Even if I had money and position, but a human that doesn’t have an identity in his heart is weak. Since the old days I hated myself. Even without getting involved with a Diva… I myself wanted to remodel my body and become [the new me].”

“For that sake, your guinea pigs are [little white girls] huh. Indeed, certainly the crime that you committed was the manifestation of your own will and desire. You red pervert.”

“Do me a favor and kill me. Even that broken me… is right now changing from the root becoming something that isn’t me. Like this my latent dark part will be exposed under broad daylight, in the end I will become the fodder of a Diva and become the enemy of the human race…”

“Even though you hate yourself, but you hate to become something that is not yourself?”

"Just that I won't recognize. I wish to die shouldering my sin and ugliness, as myself…"

"I won't allow that. That's just running away. I cannot kill you, Red Metallica."

"Run away you say? Before I become not myself, wishing to die by the hand of my dear childhood friend—no, with the hand of the ally of justice(American Justice), you are saying that's an escape?"

"Become my right-hand man. I'm going to get eaten soon, see… you are talking exaggeratedly like that but, if you rest for a while you can still hold out for a while right? And then hand over the data of your human experiments to my gamble. If we use people and money to advance systematically, your experiments can be implemented immediately. If we do that, you are going to become a cyborg, and you can lengthen the time to hold on to your sanity a little more."

"…You, are you still a gang leader? You have been awakened to the power of King already.

"My days as a King is still short, I'm holding the post as gang boss and an ally of justice concurrently. Well, during that time I plan to hijack the government with my gang and unified them."

"…Further you said that you want the data of an inhuman body remodeling you say? …Kuhaha-"

Red laughed amusedly from the bottom of his heart.

"American Justice Mythology huh… why were you chosen as King by them I wonder?"

"That's obvious. That's because they can't choose the method. Unfortunately America that was an economic power once, right now is just a Mythology minor country. America won't survive if we don't use mafia methods. If it's me, I'm the best in the world in that kind of field."

"Can you win…? Not only against South America, even against the other Magic Advanced Countries too."

"For that, first your research data and cooperation is required."

"Aren't you desperate? Since when did you become that kind of patriot, Clark?"

"Unexpectedly all of those poor people raised badly are patriots. No matter what kind trash those poor scoundrel are… they won't run away from the fact that they were born and raised in America. We survived in America relying on our bodies alone—that's why they themselves have pride, we feel gratitude just to America. In other words, they are a [prideful] bunch. The sole important thing that I have."

"Pride huh… Since I was a brat until now, the more I grew into an adult the more I lost that. And then now I'm being eaten by a Diva…"

"Don't run away. That's what I'm saying as running away. Fight. Fight, recover your pride. Become my right-hand man, devote yourself until your real limit for this country. Remodel your whole body into a machine until the extreme, stab electrodes into your brain and reinforce your brain unshakably, if by doing that you still cannot get away from the Diva, then until you become raving mad, until your real breaking point, use up yourself for the sake of the Stars and Stripes! Fight until there is not even a single scrap left! You can be killed by someone… only after you become a real messed-up cripple.”

Kazuki who was immersed in the dream world, was back to himself only in that instant from his shock.

The Red Metallica that Kazuki knew was… a human that he absolutely couldn’t forgive. Every single word that he spouted out, was truly preposterous.

That was why Kazuki fought and defeated Red. Red died due to machine breakdown.

Perhaps this dream, if it was truly a past that had really happened—then Red had truly ended up like this woman’s prediction.

The one who was assigned the role as the god of death, was Kazuki.

But this scene, was it the [moment where evil was born by mistake]?

The woman continued with strong words.

“Die as the hero of this country’s defense, die as a madman that won’t be praised by anyone of this country!”

“…How harsh. That’s surely… very tough huh.”

“America is in that much of a pinch right now. It’s completely covered in a pitch black destiny. Since I became King, the more I comprehend the situation, I know… this country only has a one in a thousand chance of victory. In my hopeless bet to become the world’s strongest… it’s necessary to work out every single plan possible. This is the way the gang works.”

Slavery. Alchemy that converted human minds into wealth.

An absolute capitalism country that became stronger the richer it was.

What Kazuki found unacceptable and rejected—the muddy black hidden side of the resplendent America.

But was this scene really the [moment where evil was born by mistake]?

Was the woman’s deed evil?

“America is it… Certainly even though I hate everything, I have never thought of leaving this country. Was there something definite even in me? Just like the Indians in the past that loved the earth… I too, towards this country, towards America”

“Now stand up. Right now, you too had lost everything except your own body and America. That’s including your given moral sense. From now on, you are going to fight without choosing your method. Take my hand!”

Red’s body was heavy like mud. Most of the mental area of his brain was all destroyed, he devoted all of the little part that still functioned sanely to his conversation with Clark. But Red mustered a willpower that seemed as if pulverizing his soul and raised his left arm. That woman—Clark grasped that hand tightly. It was the soft hand of a woman, but it was a terrifyingly heated hand.

A resolve to not give a damn whatever method he chose—a jet black will was burning inside him.

“…Which reminds me, this is also a difficult topic but, it seems like in South America my little sister has also become the Indian Mythology’s King.”

Clark changed the topic completely. Her tone was easy but mixed with a deep sigh just a little.

“Since a long time ago she was completely immersed in things like yoga, spiritual, occultism and so on saying absurd things like [discovering the origin of magic power in the cosmos of oneself] and whatever, that fickle otaku girl is the King of Indian Mythology, can you imagine? Even though I was going as far as stealing to earn tuition for her, just when I thought if she was hanging out with a strange group that felt organic in the school, what in the word did she learn from them? During the time I was busy she ran wild towards a preposterous direction.”

“Eimi is…?”

When he called that name, Red’s voice tone was colored with a completely different emotion than what could be felt from him until now.

“It seems the founder-sama of a religious sect in South America that introduced herself with a nonsense name like [Medicine Wheel] is that girl. That’s based from the investigation of the guys from my organization. What the hell, Clark and Eimi, what absurd sisters we are. Even though I did my best industriously like this, that girl denied the whole human race’s self and is trying to return everything to Mother Nature, dragging all of the Americans and American culture in it.”

“Denial of self huh.. .that’s completely… running away alright.”

“Before that girl really becomes a part of Mother Nature, we’ve got to win in our battle against the Indians. You, in the past you liked that girl right?”

- KAA—*…Kazuki who was watching the dream was filled with the feeling of shame that floated in Red’s chest and head from his synchronization.

Clark laughed a little in jest.

“How’s that? You too now want to do your best until your last right? Now, stand up. For America, fight until your body, your heart, even your morals turns into ashes…”

—Kazuki woke up at the same time with Lotte.

Leme was lying down between the two of them, but this girl didn’t show any sign that she would wake up yet.

Inside the room that was still dark, Kazuki and Lotte were staring at each other in confusion.

“Kazuki-oniisan, I, saw a weird dream. Red Metallica came out in it…”

“So you too Lotte? No way this is a coincidence right?”

Kazuki reflexively stared at his hand luggage that he put at his bedside. He had secretly stored Red’s goggle inside the student bag. When they dealt with all the traces at that fortress, for some reason he became concerned with it and brought it back. While hiding them from the people in the hotel, sometimes he observed the construction of the machine in his own way, but…

“Does it react with our mind?”

Lotte murmured. Lotte who was too excellent in Telepathy magic and unconsciously Telepathized with other people was beside him, that was why that possibility was also the first one that came into Kazuki’s mind.

The residual thought that dwelled inside the deceased Red’s article was reacting with Lotte, then through his bond with Lotte, Kazuki also saw the dream… Unconsciously his spine shuddered. To be connected by Telepathy with something that was left behind inside the deceased’s article was just creepy.

Since magic appeared in this world, an argument that [might ghosts possibly exist] had become popular.

Mental power possessed powers of physical influence and could be manifested, it was hard to deny that existence.

Not to mention in the other countries that had become religious countries, even Japan that was a civilization country and then most likely even America, the number of people that advocated spiritual ideology increased rapidly.

There was the foundation for that from the fact that scientism which attached too much importance to reasoning couldn’t bring happiness to society at the deathbed in the previous era where magic still didn’t exist. By believing the existence of a soul and the world after death, the number of humans that ran away from the unhappiness of reality increased.

But despite having obtained the power of magic at great pains, making the power of magic as the foundation and entrusting their wishes to the world after death, in the end was such an interpretation of the world a correct one he wondered.

[Denial of self huh… that’s completely… running away right.]

Red’s words from the dream flashed inside Kazuki’s head. His appearance was completely like a different person from the Red that Kazuki encountered. The vestiges of madness was still thin than what he showed to Kazuki… there was also an aspect of him that showed embarrassment from the name of the girl called Eimi.

The figure that Kazuki saw in reality—was that the result of resisting until his limit, the mere shadow of his former self after being driven mad until the limit.

He had carried out the ideal of North America’s King.

Was it correct, or was it mistaken.

“Just as we thought… this country is really sad desu…”

Lotte murmured to herself.

It was neither correct nor mistaken, but sad.

That was the most appropriate expression to express this feeling that blocked his chest right now.

Part 2

And then, it was the breakfast time in hotel Yggdrasil that they had repeated many times.

“Somehow there is an inconsistency in the chef’s cooking last night and this morning isn’t it?”

Hikaru-senpai that was strangely sharp in some aspects pointed out while chewing her food.

It seemed that everyone around him also felt it somehow and they nodded.

“Aren’t they trying out alchemic cooking?” Kazuki answered.

Yesterday morning Kazuki put into practice preparing American style food with alchemic cooking where he then introduced it to the chefs here, that might be the cause. But their control of magic power was still not perfect and the completed cooking was not uniform.

Having said that the result was better by doing it with alchemic cooking rather than by not using it, so it didn’t mean that the chefs were making the customers as their guinea pigs.

“As expected Nii-sama’s cooking is the best, rather Nii-sama himself is the best!”

“Don’t say things as if you are hungering for me.”

“Nii-sama plate where sashimi is served on top of Nii-sama’s naked body… Nii-sama cake where fresh cream and fruits are decorated on Nii-sama… those cannot be realized, except in dreams!”

“That’s it! …Let’s do that after this.” Kaguya-senpai said that with a serious face while everyone around also nodded simultaneously.

Wait everyone, wait a second. You all are stepping into madness you know?

“I’m not going to do something like that okay—!”

Kanon-senpai stood up energetically and yelled.

“If you are going to do that kind of thing than you can put sashimi or fresh cream or whatever on top the nude body of this history strongest former student council president Kanon-sama instead—☆”

“Abstain—” “Abstain♪” “Abstain please.”

Kaguya-senpai, Hikaru-senpai, and Koyuki, those three poured out vehement booing at Kanon-senpai, making her sit back in dejection.

“…Come to think of it Kanon-senpai, where is Akane-senpai?”

“If it’s her, right now she is going for her routine check of Queen Kaguya, she hasn’t come back yet.”

“It’s strange for her that she still hasn’t come back until the breakfast.”

“She might be stopping somewhere on the way. Perhaps she found a café that has delicious sweets or an interesting toy shop, then she secretly hustle without telling anyone, no doubt about that-☆”

“There is no way she would do that, she is not Kanon-senpai.”

“Mugii—, talking like you know anything! Even though you still don’t know about me that well!”

Kanon-senpai suddenly picked up a mini tomato from her salad with her fingers and threw it at Kazuki.

…To do outrageous thing so suddenly!

Kazuki immediately read the trajectory of the flying mini tomato and caught it in his mouth with a snap before chewing it noisily. “What!?” looking at Kanon-senpai whose eyes were wide open, Kazuki clapped his hand and provoked her “Hey, hey, heeey!” “You punk-☆” Kanon-senpai pick another mini tomato even further, then boiled egg and sausage too before throwing them. Kazuki caught them altogether with his mouth and enjoyed it deliciously, not wasting the food.

When Kazuki showed a broad grin, Kanon-senpai also grinned broadly.

“Fuh-…you are quite good. But don’t think that I will recognize you as the greatest in the Knight Academy with just this much! But I’ll recognize you as the rival of this me-☆”

A heart mark of positivity level-up flew at him airily from Kanon-senpai.

“…Kazuki is the same level as Kanon-senpai.”

Hikaru-senpai’s eyes turned into dot.

“Even though fundamentally Otouto-kun is a serious child, but sometimes he shows absurd moods and reactions doesn’t he? Saying ‘hey, hey, hey’ like that…”

Feeling astounded gazes from everyone to him, Kazuki immediately justified himself.

“This kind of mood is because since I was small I was raised doing brother-sister manzai with Kanae. The fault comes from that. That my tension gets completely raised when an outrageous idiot comes, is because of Kanae’s fault.”

“Nii-sama!? Please don’t talk of me as if I’m the root of all evil! From the start Nii-sama is a superbly happy person you know!!”

Kuh-, he didn’t want his childishness where he completely got fired up in the spur of the moment to be recognized…!

At that time the door of the dining hall was opened, Akane-senpai and Mary entered inside at the same time.

Both of them raised their voice “Kazuki!” at the same time.

And then they looked at each other before Akane-senpai gave up her turn saying, “Please, you first.”

“Well then,” Saying that Mary looked right at Kazuki.

Mary Mayweather Junior. Along with Virginia Dance(Ginny), they were upper echelons of the North American Knight Order and also comrades that agreed with Kazuki’s thinking to betray the King of North America.

"Kazuki, the preparation for the meeting with King is finished."

The group turned noisy. Kazuki too unintentionally felt nervous on his back.

…Finally huh. However, what kind of preparation that was needed for something like this?

Was it about how much Kazuki could be trusted, were they finally finished collecting proof and information?

Or perhaps they detected signs of South America coming in to attack and so called to meet in panic?

"Understood. When and where?"

"When King stay in Las Vegas, she stays in Las Vegas' oldest hotel [Flamingo]. It was the hotel that was built by the legendary gangster [Bugsy]. Right now, it's the meeting place for the upper echelon guys… the nine close aide of King, the [Numbers]. After a bit longer, come with me to go there."

"She respected the gang even though she is the king?" Kaguya-senpai tilted her head.

Mary laughed and answered "Bugsy is like the person that is the ancestor of Las Vegas after all."

Kazuki recalled the dream that he saw this morning—the America's King who ascended from the gang even now still acted like a gangster.

A woman who didn't care what method she used for the sake of her objective. A woman that possessed a peculiar aesthetic.

Continuing after Mary, Akane-senpai opened her mouth.

"There was a contact from Japan to Queen Kaguya. Germany is moving. In order to talk directly with you, right now the Basileus of Germany is heading to America it said."

…That's unexpected, Kazuki felt his spine shudder.

It was simultaneous. At the same time, the situation began to move from two directions in one go.

If he could say what he wanted, then it was to make clear of what Germany was going to do from here on, and only after that he wanted to meet the King of America. But the events couldn't develop in that order.

Around an hour after the breakfast finished, Mary and Ginny came to Kazuki's room and called him "The preparation is finished, come along."

Kazuki gave a call and gathered all his comrades in his own room.

"Does everyone plan to go?" Mary's eyes turned round.

"We also need bodyguards right? After all there is a chance that if we show our faces alone we will be ganged up on and beaten up."

Besides, thinking from the other side's position that was not a bad idea actually.

Someone who couldn't be trusted as an ally but it would be bad if they sided with the Indians. If they concluded as such, then it was possible that Kazuki and co. would be tricked and eliminated.

His gathered comrades had a chilly nervous atmosphere hanging around them. Seems like only a few among them had the readiness to proceed toward battle after this. However Ginny smiled wryly.

“I think it will be okay. Kazuki can trust me and Mary, in our group we are the side that insisted that we should join hands together in order to beat the Indians.”

Ginny said that and then Mary continued after her saying “Believe us.”

“Thank you, Mary, Ginny.”

From the beginning Mary and Ginny held animosity towards slavery, and when they knew about Kazuki’s thinking, they promised to cooperate with Kazuki. In short they wouldn’t betray North America, but they only betrayed the King alone. …If they really cooperated with Kazuki for real.

Kazuki believed the humanity of the both of them. …However he also couldn’t believe them 100%, it was a difficult position for him. It would be endless if he started jumping at shadows.

The other party that he would meet after this, was a woman that didn’t hesitate no matter what method she used…

Since before the meeting, Kazuki already had a presentiment of a steel-like impression for that woman.

Kazuki and his group exited hotel Yggdrasil and headed to hotel Flamingo that was located in the south of the strip. They could immediately see the hotel’s majestic appearance.

The historical hotel kept its trademark of a pink flamingo and a palm garden even though it had been mostly reconstructed because of deterioration from old age.

The hotel that was named [Flamingo] from the nickname of Virginia Hill, the lover of the legendary gangster, had its outer wall shaped round with lustrous light pink color, it was a sexy atmosphere while also giving off a feeling of liberation. Saying it in a strange way, it had the feel of a love hotel with southern country taste added in it, making it a hundred times more gorgeous.

When they went through the gate and traversed the courtyard, there were real flamingos walking around leisurely.

“Otouto-kun, that’s, that’s cute!”

“The two flamingos are facing each other and their long necks look like a heart shape isn’t it?”

“It’s true-! Otouto-kun is romantic!!”

“But senpai is cuter than even those flamingos, surely senpai is even more beautiful than Virginia Hill.”

“What are you saying Otouto-kun~, geez~!”

Kaguya-senpai’s cheeks reddened with a puff and then she hit Kazuki’s shoulder repeatedly.

Looking at Kazuki like that, from the side Hikaru-senpai was,

“For Kazuki who got carried away, Flamingo Attack!!”

Hikaru-senpai stuck out her right hand and propped it at her lips imitating a beak, then that beak attacked Kazuki repeatedly.

“What’s with these guys.” Shouko was looking at them ridiculously. Don’t look here with that eye.

Ginny was looking at them with a lukewarm smile.

“If we have to classify hotel Flamingo, it’s a hotel that’s popular for families.”

Palm trees were growing thick in the courtyard, there flamingos were released and left to their devices. The hotel’s wall that were opposite of the courtyard was glass sided, allowing the customers that ate at the restaurant to watch the flamingos of the courtyard while enjoying their meal. Certainly it was something intended for a family, an enjoyable arrangement.

However for the King to stay at a hotel whose business was intended for families made for a curious gap.

“It looks like there is no security at all though.”

When they entered the entrance, Akane-senpai asked in curiosity.

“King and all the close aides are in full force here after all, security is unnecessary.”

Hearing Mary’s reply, Akane-senpai pressed her forehead with her hand and hung her head down.

“…I’m acting stupid again from being taken by common sense. That’s right isn’t it, even Kazuki usually doesn’t have any security at all staying in the Witch’s Mansion, isn’t it?”

Kings were carefree because they were supreme beings. Just like how Arthur and Regina also came to Japan alone.

The number of people were few, but after this the Basileus of Japan and North America were going to meet face to face leading their respective elites, that was why it was the same as two large armies facing one another.

Everyone rode the elevator and ascended to the highest floor.

The highest floor where they got off was a monotone floor where everything was made from marble. It was wide, but there were only five rooms. There was a large door of a huge room when they exited the elevator, then there were two rooms each at the sides.

Mary and Ginny pushed open from the front the left and right of the large double doors.

The heavy doors opened with a creaking sound.

The sight made one vaguely reminded of the [audience room] of western castles.

Of course there was no antiquated throne inside the room—in the center of the huge room, there was a large marble table. At the seat located directly across the entrance, a lone woman was sitting. The black suits wrapped on her body really made one feel the gangster atmosphere. This woman, was King.

Behind her were six women standing by. When Kazuki and co. entered the room, Mary and Ginny closed the door and joined the six women. Originally there were nine people, but after losing Red the [Numbers] became eight people.

The sitting King purposely didn’t stand up and met her eyes with Kazuki. Seemed like she was someone that didn’t particularly like things like manners or diplomacy etiquette.

Being prompted by that gaze, Kazuki also sat at the opposite seat wordlessly.

It was a hard marble chair without cushion. There was only a single chair at the table. Kazuki’s companions were standing by behind Kazuki like the Numbers at the other side.

To prepare just two chairs, was she saying that the talk itself was just between the two Basileus?

“Clark Moore. America’s King.”

The woman sitting in front of him talked with a dignified and lustrous voice like marble.

She was the very same person as the woman he saw in the dream.

In the dream her face couldn't be seen clearly from the backlighting, but—she was a woman with intensity.

Her face was well-ordered, but because she was too intense she didn't feel like a beauty. She was a different quality human—she felt like a female wild animal. However she kept her cool with her fierceness hidden inside.

Her blonde hair that was like a mane reminded him of a lion. She had a rough hairstyle, but the glossiness of her blond hair was sparkling like pure gold.

Her skin was pure white but—there was a large scar on her face. It was the proof that she had a rough life since she was but a little girl with immature magic power.

Her sharp eyes were staring at Kazuki straightforwardly but, she was expressionless as if staring at empty air. It was completely like a sculpture made from marble.

However if her scar was hidden by makeup, her hairstyle changed, and her face showed a smile, surely her impression would change completely.

Kazuki had a basis for thinking that.

"I'm Hayashizaki Kazuki. …So you are not a hotel-keeper aren't you?"

Kazuki was lost whether to match the other in talking casually or talk politely but, in the end he talked in a way that was easy for him to talk.

"Aah, that's right, this is not our first meeting." Clark answered without changing her expression at all.

This woman was… that hotel-keeper who appeared at the end of his date with Kamimura-san and threw him an extremely dangerous question to probe him.

"My bad for that time. I wanted to try talking to you once."

Even though the talk would be easier if she would just show a smile or shyness even for a little but she was not.

"Then I wonder if there was a deep meaning in the question that time?"

"Yeah, I understood that you are someone who didn't let your guard down from the conversation that time. The nastiest kind of guy."

As if stabbing at him with a naked blade, Clark said out hostile words.

"What do you mean?"

Kazuki too played dumb without changing his expression.

"Anyway, guest from Japan, my thanks for expressing your cooperation with us."

"Of course, so you are going to accept our help then?"

"But of course. Surely everyone's cooperation will become a decisive card to break the rivalry of the South and North."

Clark didn't behave modestly at all. As if she had seen through that there was no possibility of Kazuki and his group to side with South America.

“We will show you that we will be useful to end the war without fail. We cannot overlook the destruction they bring to the town and the people.”

“Thank you.” Clark answered without even a smile.

“Well then it might be too sudden but let’s talk about the future. First can you share the information about South America… those Indians? How much do you know about them?”

Kazuki talked about everything that he knew.

“They have an ideology to aim for becoming one with Mother Nature by throwing away the self of all the human races, then they have the special characteristic where the more death they bring about, that death will become the power of the Mythology… that’s as far as I understand it.”

Becoming one with Mother Nature meant to die.

Therefore they didn’t fear death, the more death there were, their strength increased. They also killed their opponents.

“That recognition is true. I’ll add more to that… the name of the Indian Basileus is [Medicine Wheel]. It’s not the real name but a mnemonic name. [All creation become one, circling without beginning or end, therefore one must not have attachment to oneself], that saying for them is the meaning of the world principle.”

It matched with what he saw in the dream. In other words that was the little sister of this Clark. The family of this marble-like woman… such thing was beyond his imagination, but in the dream Red showed a smile and easy tone regarding her.

“And then the important thing… the ability to turn death into power is attached with demerit. Those guys have ideology that aim for unification with Mother Nature, but the Basileus of the Indians completely embodied that ideology. With the faith and the more the Mythology’s power increases due to death, the Indian Basileus is unifying with Mother Nature… she was restrained to the earth and became unable to move from her spot.”

“…!? Is that true? How can you ascertain such a thing?”

The Indian Basileus was located deep inside their stronghold, but with how their war front was currently in a struggle for supremacy, ascertaining that figure was supposed to be difficult.

In order to answer that question, Clark first added the explanation regarding the enemy’s headquarters.

“At the southern tip of Great Plains, [Texas]’s capital… no, those guys don’t do anything like setting up a [city]. Their headquarters, or rather their stronghold is located there. In that grasslands area, there is a jungle that is growing luxuriantly with shape like an overturned bowl. Its size is around the same scale like this dome city Las Vegas. This jungle is exactly the famous holy land in Indian Mythology, [Wakan Tanka]. At its center part, there is a huge baobab tree towering high like the world tree. In its trunk, Medicine Wheel is unifying with Mother Nature as if she is being crucified. It seems like her wrists and ankles are buried.”

One of the Numbers that was standing by behind Clark showed a pose spreading out both her arms as if giving example. Without even looking back, Clark waved her hand as if saying that there was no need to do that.

"You talk as if you have seen it yourself."

"Until now we had sent more than a hundred people to scout, one of the spies accidentally managed to breakthrough until that far and witnessed the sight, he then managed to return back. Other than that guy there was no one else that came back home."

More than a hundred people…! Kazuki unintentionally gulped.

They didn't return. Was there a chance that they were treated as prisoners…

"I guess they were unified with Mother Nature already."

Clark talked as if seeing through inside Kazuki's heart. The prisoners were probably massacred.

More than a hundred deaths. War… he understood that but he couldn't really feel it.

By the blessing of defensive magic power, there was almost no deaths that came out from the war between Japan and Yamato.

Even though it was the same civil war but this side was far more gruesome. The Indians who slaughtered prisoner were also merciless, but… Clark that understood that yet continued to send spies was also merciless.

"Thanks to that meritorious feat, we could confirm that Medicine Wheel won't participate personally in the invasion. That's an information that's worth the life of a hundred people right?"

Certainly it was a valuable information. For the Basileus to be unable to come out to the front line was a big handicap—however in that one point Clark was supposed to be similar. Ginny had said that Clark's ability was [consumable type]. The more that power was used, it would diminish and couldn't be recovered easily.

American Justice Mythology became stronger the more wealth they acquired. Most likely Clark's [King's Authority] was also like that. Clark became stronger the wealthier the country was, he didn't understand in what kind of form she became stronger, but the more she fought the more the wealth of the country decreased and the whole part of the Mythology would also weaken.

Whether it was American Justice Mythology or Indian Mythology, they amplified the original strength of the Mythology by carrying some demerit. If they could make use of it skillfully they should be able to overturn the difference of strength with the other Mythologies.

"Medicine Wheel won't appear on the battlefield with her focusing just on defense. Therefore our current enemy are Medicine Wheel's close aides—the seven battle Chiefs."

Kazuki had met one of those [Chiefs], Crazy Horse where he had actually talked with her.

There was no hierarchical relationship in Indian society, but the people who had some kind of field they specialized in carried out the role to teach and guide their surrounding people in that field. That was the Chief.

So he guessed that the expert in battle was this Combat Chief.

“The strength of those Chiefs unfortunately surpass my close aides the Numbers.”

Behind Clark there were eight close aides standing by including Mary and Ginny. Originally it seemed that there were nine people, but—with Red Metallica gone right now the Numbers had eight people.

Clark continued her story. Her expression didn’t change at all, her sharp gaze kept staring straightforwardly at Kazuki without any wavering. Kazuki was constantly receiving a feeling of oppression. While conversing, he felt he was being observed by an unshakable will.

“There is a strong barrier put up at the holy land [Wakan Tanka], making all kind of magic power invalid. All the spies that tried to infiltrate there were stripped bare of their magic power, that was why it was only obvious they couldn’t survive and come back… Looking at the wavelength of that barrier’s magic power, most likely it was something the seven Chiefs put up. If we defeat all the Chiefs, surely the barrier will naturally vanish. As long as this barrier doesn’t disappear, our side won’t be able to attack the holy land.”

“So in other words, first we have to assault and defeat these Chiefs then.”

Crazy Horse was at the battle that Kazuki witnessed before but these Chiefs were showing their figure elusively at all battlefields. Even if they tried to aim for these Chiefs, they couldn’t detect at all in which area of South America’s nature they were hiding at.

North America was constantly forced to the defensive stance while protecting their cities.

”I wanted to immediately come out in an attack, but this is unfortunate.”

Kazuki was talking with enthusiastic words before but this was his true opinion. He wanted to clear away the dark clouds whirling above this American continent for even a second faster, he also couldn’t leave Japan unprotected for long.

Clark shook her head.

“But now that it has come to this I think that it’s not a long stretch anymore. South America should already know that the reinforcements from Japan has allied with our side. You also made an appearance at the other side right?”

Kazuki nodded. His face was saying ‘We didn’t make any detour though, we also know nothing about the factory or Red.’

“The battle strength of our side has increased in one go. Until now the Indians were dispersed on a wide range in similar numbers to attack us, but now, even with the other areas staying even with the Indians just like until now, they will definitely have the tables turned on them here at Las Vegas. The thing the other side feared the most is to have their battle strength crushed one by one.”

"In other words… the Indians plan to gather and attack next time with all their battle strength?"

"I estimate that it will become like that. Surely those guys will have all seven of the Chiefs lead their whole army and attack. Most likely it will be on this Las Vegas."

"And at that chance we will turn the table, and destroy the barrier."

"Exactly. I want to have everyone from Japan along with Numbers to crush these numbers. If the barrier is broken, I will also participate and attack the holy land [Wakan Tanka]."

"…Wait a second, you are not going out to the battlefield yourself and just make the Basileus of your alliance partner to bear the brunt of the all-out war? If we lose then it's the end of your side's all-out war right?"

After the all-out war it would be the attack to the enemy's stronghold… of course the one that would be the fiercer battle from those two was supposed to be the first all-out war. Clark shook her head acting as if it was really regretful. For the first time her pressuring gaze was off just for an instant.

"Because of the circumstance of my King's Authority, I won't go out to the battlefield carelessly."

"What kind of Authority is that?"

"Of course I cannot say that."

Of course Kazuki didn't think that she would give the answer. If Ginny's words wasn't a lie, Kazuki already had a prediction of what it might be, however, just because of that didn't mean he could stay quiet.

Kazuki imagined himself fighting formidable enemies while behind him this Clark was watching fixedly at his back. It was a chilling thought.

"I cannot say it but, it's a type of Authority that will have repercussions later if I use its power too much. If I don't constantly preserve my power, you will be able to do whatever you please to this country right?"

For the first time Clark showed her expression while saying that, she grinned broadly in provocation.

'This woman…', inside his heart Kazuki regretted bitterly. She didn't have any intention at all to fight together shoulder-to-shoulder. Far from his side making a careless mistake, she was frankly directing suspicion at them.

"I'm not proposing cooperation from selfish desire to do as I please towards America!"

"What sincere words huh." She talked with a mocking tone mixed in it.

Of course Kazuki was… harboring the treacherous thought of wanting to dispose of this Clark from the seat of North America's King because he couldn't tolerate North America's slavery.

He was going to make North America win while searching for the timing to betray Clark and defeat her. That was Kazuki's objective but… sure enough how should he advanced the talk to smooth this?

Even though at the very least they had to first cooperate with each other in order to win against South America…

At that time there was a flurried sound from the back, the door opened. Without any knocking, a knight of America barged inside.

“King, it’s an emergency!”

“What is it, so noisy.”

The knight stole a glance at Kazuki and co. in worry. Clark shook her head.

“It’s okay to not pay any attention to these guys and talk. They are allies after all.”

“Ma’am! A woman that introduced herself as Germany’s Basileus is violating our territory with frightening speed, she is already above the land. However there is no sign of her inflicting harm to our side. She is looking for a meeting with King!”

‘She is coming right now at this timing?’, Kazuki thought dumbfoundedly. Even Kazuki, that knew that Germany was coming, was startled, yet Clark didn’t even show any surprised expression hearing the report. This woman… was she really made from stone or metal?

“So after the Basileus-sama of Japan and Britain, now it’s Germany. Well, that’s fine. Bring her here courteously.”

“Ma’am!” Giving out a sharp response, the knight turned back on his heel and exited the room.

“Even though I made you guys wait for long, but giving out immediate reply like this to Germany, sorry for that, but…”

Clark was grinning provocatively again.

“Seems like she is you guys’ company right? I’ll deal with all of you altogether.”

The door was quietly opened. That woman was gracefully entering inside the room.

“Nice to meet you all, everyone. I am called Hrotsvit Lesedrama. Pleased to make your acquaintance.”

If Clark Moore was heavily calm like a marble, this woman was softly calm like silk floss. She was smiling at Arthur “Long time no see, Arthur” like a blooming flower, and then she also turned her gaze at Beatrix.

“Beatrix too, it’s good that you seem energetic.”

“Ma’am-!” Beatrix replied with an unusual nervous feeling floating from her.

She was a gorgeous woman that was far removed from what came to mind from the word [Basileus].

She was wearing a calming deep blue robe with a veil put on her head, giving off an austere appearance. She was holding some kind of long staff, only her silver hair that spilled out from the veil was dazzling like platinum. Her eyes were thinly giving off a mysterious silver color.

Together with the gentleness that could be felt from her tone, her atmosphere seemed like a pious nun.

“I’m Hayashizaki Kazuki.” Kazuki stood up and greeted her.

"Hayashizaki Kazuki… that's a good name. In Norse Mythology a tree symbolized a strong warrior."

Clark gave off instructions to the knight that led Hrotsvit here.

"She should have things she wants to talk about. Prepare a chair."

On the other hand Arthur was kept standing. It seemed that for Clark, a chair was purely and rationally offered based on whether the other side had something to talk or not. It was not something to express etiquette or respect.

Arthur too didn't seem to hold discontent with that, but leaving him aside Hrotsvit was courteously saying thanks "Thank you very much" and sat on the brought chair.

Hrotsvit sat at the right side. The gaze affixed at Kazuki changed. Now Clark was staring fixedly at Hrotsvit rather than Kazuki. On the other hand Hrotsvit was… as if ignoring that gaze of Clark, she was staring fixedly at Kazuki. Kazuki was alternately looking at the two.

“I came here to cooperate in this battle.” Hrotsvit faced Kazuki and opened her mouth.

And then with her voice tone keeping its calm, devastating words continued from that.

“This is a wonderful event. When the battle ends, we will divide America evenly between Japan and Germany won’t we? And it looks like the land has been already divided into two just right, I love nature, so I’m fine with South America and the South American continent you know. As for you all, how about taking North America and Canada?”

The queen of Norse Mythology kept her gaze away from Clark, with her calm voice tone, and her unchanging peaceful expression—she demolished the atmosphere of the room.

Hrotsvit Lesedrama completely ignored the country called America.

She treated them as if they were nothing from the start, as just a worthless fiction.

—With a shudder, Clark’s atmosphere changed. Her expression was cold like marble without any change. But the thin aura of magic power she was clad in flared up like flames from the raise of emotions she couldn’t suppress.

Even the Numbers were shaken. “…You bastard!” One person raised her voice.

“The ladies standing at the corner are directing aggressive intent towards us, but is it fine for me to attack them? I will kill and offer them like broken flower stalk though.”

“Stop it.” Clark commanded the Numbers behind her.

“Please do that. When the battle is over all of you will be entered into Hayashizaki Kazuki’s rank of subordinates right? Let’s not throw away life meaninglessly.”

“Just wait a second, I don’t have any intention of that. I want to respect America to stay America. I don’t have any desire for any territory. I have respect for this country.”

Kazuki flusteredly interjected into Hrotsvit’s audaciousness.

“Oh? Then what is your objective?”

“Japan is opposing Loki. He is a Diva from your Mythology. Even though Loki is a Diva of the Chaos Side he joins hands with China and Russia, right now he was turning into a threat towards Japan… no, towards all Magic Advanced Countries. I want America to become an ally for opposing them. That’s my only wish.”

Hearing Kazuki’s serious appeal, Clark moved her strong gaze from Hrotsvit to Kazuki.

“Seems like you are saying your true feelings just now.” Clark murmured who knew how much of her true feeling in it.

“Then you and Arthur are telling me to cooperate in a battle where there is no plunder that can be obtained? You are telling this me, the Basileus of Norse Mythology ‘don’t plunder’?”

"For the sake of opposing the threat to the world."

"I understand that there is a need to gather into one in order to oppose Loki's threat. However rather than making America into an ally, I think it's more advantageous to use them as a plundering target though."

"This is not a problem of loss and gain."

"I like battle, but I dislike battle where there is nothing to gain. Putting aside battle to show your honor as a warrior, pillage is necessary. Please allow me to plunder. After all at the end of wholesome plunder, eventually all the human race will be gathered under the protection of Norse Mythology."

She couldn't be talked with.

But… he also couldn't say that he didn't have any will at all to concede her wish.

Among the cooperating countries the one who was the most proactive to participate in the battle of America was Japan. But it didn't have the position to say to Germany that it was not allowed to pillage without listening the other side's wish.

After all if Kazuki couldn't earn cooperation from Germany, he had to go back home to Japan.

Most likely Hrotsvit understood everything and so she acted like this. For Clark and also for Kazuki, whether Hrotsvit cooperated or not was an Achilles heel.

The one who controlled this place was Hrtosvit, she indirectly insisted her opinion using her violent nature in a roundabout way. …Kazuki thought because she was Damian and Beatrix's boss that she would be more like a hearty warrior but, the one who came seemed similar to them, yet a completely different type.

Now that he thought back Odin was a god that had a completely different personality than Thor. Odin was similar with Thor in that they liked battle, but he was known as a god that won battle using strategy rather than head on battle.

"Hrotsvit." Suddenly Arthur called on her name.

Kazuki also looked back. Arthur didn't say anything more than that and he was staring at Hrotsvit with strong eyes. The voice he was calling with, also his thrown gaze, both were sharp like a fired arrow.

"…If you also plan to participate in the talk, do I need to prepare a chair?" Clark called out from her chair.

"No thank you. There is no need for more words than this. I am here as nothing more than Hayashizaki Kazuki's addition."

Hrotsvit negated her smile and showed a pondering expression for a while. And then,

"If that person Arthur Basileus went as far as insisting that he is just an addition, then I'll go along with it for now. I'll hear your real intention later on. …Well then, please continue your discussion before I came here. The talk for the sake of winning the war."

Hrotsvit said that and smiled once more. However, as usual, that smile was ignoring Clark.

However this Hrotsvit, she made light of Clark too much.

American Mythology was weak. However she recognized that weakness, consequently she was a crafty King that was resolute in using any kind of method available. ‘There is no one more unpleasant than this woman to make into an enemy’, Kazuki thought.

It couldn’t be helped for Kazuki to think of her as the number one monster in this place.

That Clark opened her mouth.

“Now then… what talk I wonder. If I remember right the talk of the plan for the battle after this was finished. All the Chiefs of South America are going to attack here leading their army. My North American Knight Order and Japan’s reinforcement will intercept them. After winning that all-out war the seal of the holy land will be unbound and we will immediately attack there. If we have talked that far, there is nothing more that needs to be discussed.”

“Don’t play dumb. That talk is still not over yet.”

Kazuki interjected. Before he realized he had lost the will to use polite language against these guys.

“We absolutely cannot accept that you yourself won’t come out to the battlefield. In the first place the information that Medicine Wheel is really unable to move hasn’t been ascertained yet isn’t it? I think there is not enough guarantee that we can treat this war as a settled matter like that.”

There was also a possibility that Clark lied to Kazuki. Kazuki glared to Clark, his eyes saying that ‘I’m doubting that here’. There was a basis for Kazuki’s suspicion. He had justification for it.

“Certainly it’s just like what you said huh. …There is not enough proof to decide that she cannot move.”

Clark was unexpectedly opening her eyes wide.

“Also… that’s right huh. You have already conveyed from your heart enough that you are going to fight for the sake of this country. Certainly if after that I’m saying that I’m not going to fight it’s lacking in manners. That’s not fair. At the all-out battle, let’s do exactly just as the words imply, an all-out battle with me also going out to the battle.”

Perhaps she thought to make Kazuki into a wall against the threat called Hrotsvit. Clark made a complete change and softened her attitude. Kazuki agreed and nodded. Then Hrotsvit interjected.

“Well then, I’ll go home to Germany and prepare for Loki, China, and Russia. That’s the form of my cooperation, adieu.”

Saying that nonchalantly, Hrotsvit stood up.

Kazuki reflexively ‘This woman…’ glared at her. What she was saying was correct, but even though she had already insisted for her own privileges until that far and not giving any help in his argument for the King’s involvement in battle, she just so easily proclaimed that she would return home, as expected it made him angry.

However Clark was already in a state that stopped paying attention to Hrotsvit and ignored her.

“I’m sending scouts to South America to probe. When we catch their attack timing, I’ll let you know immediately. Until then… just enjoy Las Vegas as you’ve done until now. Everyone is our important guests here.”

Clark settled the talk saying that and finished the discussion.

Part 3

"Skyscrapers that make one think of the Tower of Babel, mechanical vehicles that fly, tearing across the sky… this is a city that gives form to people's greed and pride. It makes one unable to calm down a little, doesn't it, Beatrix."

"Tha, that's right isn't it? Still I came to get used to it though."

"You must not get used to it you know."

When they exited Hotel Flamingo, Hrotsvit looked up to the sky and said that. Beatrix was quite nervous. As if she was hiding something shady. Because their timing of coming out matched, it felt as if she was added into their group.

"Hrotsvit, is it fine to talk a little?"

Arthur grabbed her shoulder and pulled her closer.

"My my." Arthur led Hrotsvit, that let herself be treated like that, into the back alley like a yankee. At the same time his empty hand was also signaling Kazuki to follow.

Telling his comrades to go back first, Kazuki followed them along.

Arthur pulled Hrotsvit forcefully and whispered into her ear.

"The tactics that you did just now, everything is meaningless."

Rather than an intimidation, Arthur was saying that calmly as if to inform her. His voice was low, he was freezing the air around them so that other people couldn't hear.

"For us, there is meaning at all even if we increase our territory in this late hour."

"What do you mean I wonder? Our Mythology will increase in strength the more number of people that believe in them. …This late hour, what do you mean?"

"It's something that has to be pondered in short term vision. …Before long the time when everything is going to be settled will come."

Arthur released her shoulder. Hrotsvit turned round to Arthur from the front.

"I heard from Regina that if I cooperate with you I can learn an important secret. So can you teach me the secret now in this place I wonder?"

Was there such a verbal message to Hrotsvit? Regina was like a gofer doing that.

"I cannot say it now. I'll tell you after the battle of America has ended in the shape that we desire."

“Just a verbal promise like that? Although, what is called information is something that loses its value the instant it’s taught to others.”

Arthur took out a thin wooden plate from his breast pocket. When he ran his finger on it, the surface of the plate was carved with thin words of light.

“This is a rune of oath. In the case I break my promise, I’ll lose the power of Basileus.”

While saying that, Arthur handed over the wooden plate to Hrotsvit.

“The famous ogham script in Celtic Myth, [geis(pledge)] isn’t it? …But trying to move someone using information as a bargaining condition is unpleasant isn’t it? The legacy of Basileus Basileon in Britain… originally shouldn’t it be something that is all shared between the Magic Advanced Countries I wonder? To use that as a bargaining condition, is that something the country of chivalry should do I wonder.”

“I don’t intend to use information as compensation. This is not a bargaining condition, it’s a selection. I cannot give important information towards a country that cooperates with Divas of the Chaos Side. If you prove to me that you are a Basileus that can contribute to the world’s order, I’ll share the information.”

“…How unpleasant, looking down from above like that. Just because your country is the origin where Basileus Basileon came from, you are yet pretending that you are the manager of this world?”

“Human that obtained knowledge, even though he obtained it not from his own wish, he still has the responsibility to treat that knowledge responsibly.”

Both sides had a fair argument in them. The inheritance of Basileus Basileon…

The great alchemist who was the leader of the secret society that was once called [Libel Mundi(Dawn’s Almighty)], Basileus Basileon gave birth to the [Philosopher’s Stone] to this world. Humans who were embed with a Philosopher’s Stone would have their force of will expanded and awakened to the power of magic, their surrounding humans would also reacted in concert and slowly made to awaken to the power of magic. [Libel Mundi] put their headquarters in Britain while putting their branches in seven big countries, they sold the Philosopher’s Stone and enlarged their organization.

However, Basileus Basileon was assassinated due to a power struggle in the organization’s internal. Due to the charismatic leader’s death, Libel Mundi lost its unifying force and its branches scattered apart before they got absorbed by the world’s nations. Those seven powerful countries stayed like that and became the Magic Advanced Countries.

Britain was Basileus Basileon’s birthplace and the country where [Libel Mundi]’s headquarters was located. There was important information that didn’t exist in other countries left in Britain as inheritance… that was what Arthur had talked about with Kazuki before.

"So this single piece of plate is the compensation then. …However, you, is it fine for you to toss away geis all over the place so simply like this?"

"My power increase from the number of my oath. Only in a little amount though."

"The things you do are unexpectedly calculating and petty aren't they… Well it's fine. Putting that aside, there is one more thing I'm concerned about. You over there… Hayashizaki Kazuki."

Turning around, Hrotsvit turned to the direction of Kazuki who turned into a bystander.

"Is there something you need with me?"

"Arthur and I are going to bet on you. Even if Arthur is fine doing that as he pleases, I don't like to entrust my own future to other people, if that person is not a formidable warrior."

"…You are saying to show my strength in a fight?"

"Yes. That's correct. Problems will come out later on if we clash with our respective full power so a rule is needed. I heard that you are an unparalleled warrior in Japan. Then… without using our respective Summoning Magic and King's Authority and Sacred Treasures at all, with only pure martial arts, if you can hit me once it's your win, is such a rule fine with you?"

"It's an exaggeration to call me unparalleled but, please do as you like. We are going to do it, here?"

"Of course. It's a little cramped back alley, but there will be no problem if we don't use Summoning Magic."

It was a rule that seemed to make light of him, but what was she planning he wondered.

Kazuki smoothly drew his sword. If the opponent didn't use Summoning Magic, sword draw technique was unnecessary. For the Hayashizaki style, sword draw was a technique to approach the enemy while evading attack magic in sheathed sword stance that was easy to move in, leap into the enemy's bosom and then immediately draw out the sword and strike.

Hrotsvit's figure emitted light, the clothes on her body transformed. Her white skin carved by Stigmata was exposed, her modest veil was replaced by a green wide brimmed hat, and a green mantel flapped at her back. That appearance reminded him of Odin's outfit as sage that was told in myth. Her neat standing figure changed completely with her long legs largely opened, her hand raised overhead the staff that she held in a stance. The tips of that staff wriggled, swelled—turning into an iron ball attached with sharp thorns.

It was not a staff but a long handled blunt weapon, a mace.

"This weapon is a Sacred Treasure, but I'm not going to use its special power."

"My sword is also a Sacred Treasure so I don't mind."

"…Then let's begin."

Hrotsvit grinned… it was an eerie smile.

The next instant, a roar reverberated on the asphalt of the back alley and her figure blurred. At the same time, Kazuki was already stepping back. A single vertical flash, the wind pressure of the swung down mace shook his front bang.

Kazuki stepped on the iron ball of the swung down mace and leaped. He jumped right above Hrotsvit and swung down his sword on her defenseless back head.

He planned to test what kind of warrior Hrotsvit was with this single swing. Regardless of east or west, there were few traditional martial arts that hypothesized of attacks right from overhead. Furthermore even the origin of the movement was out of the field of vision, it was a perfectly unseen movement. Hrotsvit was superior in the pure speed of the movement, but Kazuki's single attack was exactly like a teleportation from Hrotsvit's position.

But the instant Kazuki stepped on the mace, Hrotsvit had already began to move in evasion.

She smoothly slipped through to the side and Kazuki's slash including his body hit empty air.

And then the mace that was swung down just now was raised overhead with lightning speed. With a form completely like a baseball batter, the raised iron ball on the tip was swung directly horizontal.

Immediately what came to Kazuki's mind was an imitation of [Tenrou Kaidan] from Ikousai on his body.

But the technique was a risky undertaking like a joke that if he could he didn't want to show.

Kazuki had such leeway to make that kind of calculation because he was Foresighting Hrotsvit.

But Hrotsvit was also reading ahead his movement from his sign.

Kazuki concentrated Enchant Aura into his blade and stabbed the ground with all his strength, snapping it diagonally. The asphalt was not pierced by his blade, instead the body of Kazuki in the air was the one that got rebounded up.

As if played by a curve ball, Hrotsvit's swing hit empty air.

Kazuki landed on the wall surface of the building right beside him, and leaped at Hrotsvit's back. Kazuki attempted to stab from her blind spot.

Even if she read ahead his movement from his magic power… the more his movement turned complicated the harder it would be to read him. With this much three dimensional movement—Hrotsvit perfectly reacted to him.

Synchronized with Kazuki's encirclement, Hrotsvit was also rotating her body. At the same time his launched stab was lightly repelled by the grip part—the butt-end of the mace.

A perfect reading and movement like a machine. A perfect reaction that he couldn't feel any humanness from it.

Kazuki felt an out of place feeling. Even though Hrotsvit's body was moving perfectly, only the light of her silver colored eyes was slightly falling behind. Only the motion of her eyeballs couldn't catch up.

As if only her eyes couldn't do anything and only following along.

Aah, so that was it, it was something like that then. His doubt was cleared and he understood the aim of this mock battle.

Kazuki retook a distance between them and Hrotsvit also recovered her stance.

There he took a breath and simultaneously—Kazuki blew out magic power from his whole body.

"…!" Hrotsvit's expression stiffened.

Kazuki didn't make any sound and softly, with a slow movement that wasn't strengthened by magic power, walked closer to Hrotsvit. He released a stab. The simple strike was sucked into Hrotsvit's white chest, and hit. The weak strike that was not filled with magic power didn't even inflict a dust-sized scar and was repelled by a thick defensive magic power.

Hrotsvit stood bolt upright. Just as the rule said, with that it was the end and Kazuki sheathed his sword.

"…The mock battle to measure your capability" Hrotsvit quietly asked.

"Why did you do an act that won't have any meaning in the real battle?"

Most likely if he did a needless trick of trying to put magic power only just before the tip of the sword hit, Hrotsvit would surely evade with a super reflex. Because he used a meaninglessly empty attack that it could hit.

"But the rule is that a single strike determined the winner, so a win is a win."

Perhaps she couldn't ask him to show his true strength in a real battle for a test. However,

"In the first place, it's another matter if it's Beatrix, but I cannot imagine that you have that much of an interest in the pure techniques of a swordsman. What meaning is there in testing my capability not including Summoning Magic?"

This was not Thor's trial, but Odin's trial.

"Three moves." Hrotsvit murmured.

At the first move Kazuki saw through that Hrotsvit possessed a not so simple Foresight technique. At the second move he noticed that Hrotsvit was blind, and then at the third move he ended the match.

"If you can arrive that far in three moves, perhaps I should give you a passing mark. I don't know how much of an opponent the Basileus of those Indians are but, perhaps you won't lose I think."

Hrotsvit's Magic Dress came apart into light and she returned to her previous appearance. Her mace that was attached with a huge thorny iron ball also deflated and returned to the previous staff.

"Thank you for your cooperation, Hrotsvit."

"In the first place I didn't doubt you that seriously. I enjoying fighting and ascertaining you by myself."

The woman turned her back at Kazuki with a swish and walked towards the main street briskly.

Kazuki and also Arthur followed her along.

Hrotsvit bended her back in a big way, and after taking a deep breath she yelled.

“BEE—! AA—! TT—! RII—! XX—!!!”

It was a large voice that was not a metaphor if one said the voice rattled the dome city Las Vegas. Kazuki and Arthur reflexively pressed their ears while looking at each other. The dweller of the surrounding buildings got outside in great panic and looked around restlessly. From the direction of hotel Yggdrasil, *DODODODO!* with the force of a raging bull Beatrix was rushing here.

“MA’AM! HERE I AM!!” The rushing Beatrix stood at attention.

“I’m going home to the motherland, so take care of the rest. As much as you can, I hope you build an exceedingly amicable relationship with Hayashizaki Kazuki.”

“Ha?” For a moment, Beatrix was staring blankly, then “MA’AM!!” she replied with a large voice.

“Manifest thyself in this dimension from beyond the horizon of several lines, Skíðblaðnir(Geometry Distortion Air Warship)!”

Hrotsvit joined both her palms in front of her chest as if praying. When he opened her hand with a clap, a small dot of light was created. The dot of light ran straight and became a line, the line ran and became a surface, the surface opened and turned into a cube… Via a change like polygon depiction, it turned into a huge structure of light—a shining ship.

“Dragon ship… so that’s Odin’s collapsible warship!”

Arthur raised a voice of admiration. So that was a Summoning Magic, or was that a Sacred Treasure of a different league, or maybe a part of her King’s Authority… Kazuki couldn’t immediately discerned it but, the flying ship was floating in front of Hrotsvit’s eyes. Its hull was shallow, long and narrow, making a Viking ship of peculiar shape, so this was what was called dragon ship, there was an ornament of dragon head at the bow of the ship. When Hrotsvit jumped to board onto the ship alone, “Well then everyone, adieu.” She bowed elegantly. With that as the signal, the dragon ship raised a roar and tore through the sky.

The shining ship was fading away from sight in the blink of an eye. Beatrix was trembling all over. It was a tremble like a warrior being excited before a war but her cheeks was reddening.

“The obstacle disappeared! I got the authorization that it’s fine to get along with Kazuki…”

‘Was that really so’, Kazuki doubted inside his heart. Rather if it was the personality of that person… he had the feeling that she wanted to make Kazuki and Beatrix have good relations so she could make use of that for the sake of defeating Kazuki.

If someday the day he confronted Beatrix came… surely he would hesitate. In that opening, that disagreeable woman would attempt to bash Kazuki's head in with her mace from the back.

"Yosh, Kazuki, quick! No, however even if now try to get close with you I don't know what to do! Muscle training!? Kazuki sitting on my back while I do push-ups… My heart is throbbing hard! I want to do handcart!"

"Sorry to interrupt while you are getting fired up, but please wait. I still have something to talk about with him just the two of us."

From the side Arthur grabbed Kazuki's shoulder as if to take him away.

Beatrix left with a really dejected face. Kazuki then noticed with a 'hah' face.

"That woman Hrotsvit, she flew away as she pleased with that ship but, was she planning to go home by smashing down the dome ceiling?"

One couldn't get in and out through Las Vegas's dome except through the window exclusive for airplane that was controlled by McCarran airport.

Hearing that Beatrix nodded, "Mu, that might be difficult to do."

"Beatrix, can you tell one of Las Vegas' hotel-keepers that there is a need to guide Hrotsvit's ship?"

"Mu, got it!"

Beatrix's face turned serious and rushed away. While chasing that back with his eyes, Kazuki was worrying how he should handle her.

"Let me confirm for the sake of your peace of mind, I had already told you the secret that I'm going to teach to Hrotsvit."

"I know that, I don't think that you are ostracizing me or anything."

"When all the Basileus are backed by the Mythologies, an unusual phenomenon will happen in the world. The stage for the battle for the sake of determining the true Basileus will raise from the bottom of the sea."

Basileus Basileon's prophecy that was left behind in Britain. Arthur believed that like a devout believer.

"When you said that there is no meaning in territory" Kazuki began to talk.

"There must be something like a proof of the winner in that new continent don't you think. Something that will overturn even the boundary of countries that had been determined until now."

"As for me I think there is the great original of the [Philosopher's Stone] there. Not the small stone that was once sold to the people but a big boulder… something like a monolith."

If one had to say a thing that one would associate with from the name of Basileus Basileon, it was the Philosopher's Stone. That thing granted the power called magic to the human race, and pulled up the earth's civilization to a new stage.

It was believed that Basileus Basileon created it with alchemy, but after his death, the creation method of Philospher's Stone became wrapped in mystery.

…When Arthur was saying it was a monolith, for some reason it felt like a relic of an ancient civilization.

However in the Magic Advanced Countries, the percentage of the newly born children possessing magic power was already almost a hundred percent. Now, after such a long time it could be said that the role of the Philosopher’s Stone was over, yet…

Was the Philosopher’s Stone still possessed of an even further power?

“All the Basileus will compete for the single throne of the true Basileus. If the battle in this America is ended… The time is approaching.”

Compete for—suddenly a spark scattered inside Kazuki’s head, from the depth of his memory there were words resurrected into his mind.

[…win through the game. And then this hand will usurp the world soul(Astrum) that every Mythology desires.]

…When Naiarlatoteph displayed his true color, that guy was highly excited while spouting out words with irritating fast-talking. At the time he didn’t understand what he was talking about, and just like that he completely forgot it in the corner of his mind but… in this situation those words were matching exactly.

Astrum—all life’s mind was connected by Astrum. He didn’t clearly understand what in the world Astrum was, but it was a vast mental world that all life shared, it was something like a mind cosmos. Something like the trigger to shake that everything was in that new continent. That thing, the Mythologies that carried their own respective [Order] and the Divas of [Chaos] would scramble for that.

Did this mean that this something could be used to dye the minds of all life with that Order or Chaos?

Certainly with something like that there would be no meaning territory could accomplish. Something in an even higher dimension than that which could be used to rule over people.

Kazuki felt a chilling cold. He thought of some kind of earth-shattering conflict. Kazuki didn’t want to win in that kind of match, he also didn’t want anyone else to win.

“Whatever it is”

Arthur gathered his thought as if cutting off Kazuki’s thought.

“What I can say for sure is, there is no way such thing can be handed off to the Divas of the Chaos Side or the Mythology’s Basileus that joins hand with them.”

Certainly rather than the Basileus of China’s Mythology that carried some plan like [Red Nopperabou] became the ruler of all life, it was still better if it was Arthur instead. But he could only say ‘better’.

Kazuki felt he had began to finally see in the end of his sight, the final destination of this strange destiny.

“With all the happenings today, I have met with almost all the Basileus haven’t I…”

Ilyailia Muromets.

Arthur Basileus.

Regina Olympia Fornar.

Clark Moore, possibly Medicine Wheel.

Hrotsvit Lesedrama.

And then the one whose story he only heard from Shouko, the Basileus of China—Fu Xi.

“Does Loki know about this matter?”

“He shouldn’t know about it. I think he only has a vague hunch about the conflict between fellow Mythologies though.”

When Leme materialized by bringing out her avatar from Astrum into the real world, her knowledge and feelings from the other side went away she said. It seemed that it was different than being forgetful according to the Diva.

Loki said the word [Ragnarok], he had the hunch about a conflict between Mythologies but he didn’t seem to know more than that. He didn’t think that Loki had ever said of an objective other than something vague like [spreading Chaos] and [making those Norse Mythology guys lose].

Prometheus was also saying words [the Third Machia], but he didn’t actually know the specific. However he had said that the role to stop that disaster, as small as possible… might be Kazuki’s role.

Naiarlatoteph that granted Kazuki the hint was established in his Mythology as a being that conducted himself as someone that knew everything, even among Divas he was a special existence.

If Loki knew about this matter… he would recover the original power and knowledge of Nairlako that he put beside him, or perhaps he would attack Britain and stole [Basileus Basileon’s inheritance], he would do things like that Kazuki guessed.

“Thinking about the future events, I think your resolve to defeat both the Indian Basileus and also Clark is a good decision. At first the idea is to win over one of them into the alliance in order to oppose Loki’s camp, but… that woman is a ruffian. She is not a type of human that we can feel relieved if she is entered into our camp.”

Clark Moore was certainly scary whether as an ally or as an enemy. As a fellow human of civilized society, Kazuki felt that her sense of values didn’t out of synch too much fundamentally from him.

But she didn’t care of her method so much that it made him feel terror. Using and throwing away weak humans and building wealth and power… if she decided that as the most rational way, then she would do that thoroughly without any compassion. He could understand it but, it was a savage act. Perhaps something inside her had been completely paralyzed while she was continuously being driven by necessity.

That was why to make her stop there was no other way than to defeat her. Defeat the Indian Basileus [Medicine Wheel], then betray Clark with his returning blade, and defeat her.

Possibly just before they enter Wakan Takan in order to fight Medicine Wheel, at the all-out war with South America might be the most optimum timing for betrayal by taking advantage of the chaos.

But there was the possibility that Clark was thinking exactly the same thing. Clark was definitely doubting Kazuki and regarded him as dangerous. She might think that Kazuki had served his purpose when the seven Chiefs were defeated.

No, she would most likely think so. When he remembered back to that dream… Clark should be thinking that she wanted to defeat Medicine Wheel with her own hands.

While they both had the common objective of defeating South America, they were also mutually looking for the timing of the betrayal… He felt like even he himself was doing a crooked thing.

What a battle that worn down one’s nerve.

“Thanks to our success in dragging out Clark onto the battlefield, it’s easier for us to aim at her, and then it’s also easy to be vigilant. When South America invades here, let’s prepare so that we are ready to fight Clark anytime.”

Part 4

“I mostly understood that man.”

After Hayashizaki Kazuki’s group exited the room, Clark and her elites were staying behind there.

Clark promptly scanned a bundle of several pieces of document while musing about the dialogue just now. If there was just time, Clark would reread these documents again—it was the summarized report of the surveillance on Kazuki and co.’s activity during their stay in America.

She didn’t get tired of it no matter how many times she read… she even felt an eccentric fun from it.

“If those kind of guys didn’t come then this kind of humiliation won’t… even though without cooperating with them we could just win by ourselves…!”

One of the Numbers talked in indignation.

“Why did you let them talk as they pleased until that much!?”

“That’s obvious, if one of those three countries allied themselves with the south side then our victory prospects will be gone. …But there is no possibility of that. Arthur Basileus is following Hayashizaki Kazuki. As for Hrotsvit Lesedrama… she will only wait-and-see before appealing her presence towards the one that will be [the victorious nation]. These two countries are not really that serious to get involved that far with America. The one that is serious is only Japan that is confronting the threat of this Loki and China. That Hayashizaki Kazuki is not just giving lip service but he is really thinking of [wanting to respect America]. He is that kind of human.”

Reading from the document while recalling the remarks made in the meeting just now, Clark concluded that.

<Profiling>—in order to read Kazuki’s true feeling and aim, Clark gathered all possible information. The report was including trifling everyday habits and behaviors that at first glance seemed meaningless, forming comprehensive information. The liberally using psychology and statistic from that information led to the conclusion that [this kind of human has this kind of tendency], predicting the personality.

Haayshizaki Kazuki and the others warily froze their surrounding air in order to not be bugged when they were having important conversations. To guess their true intentions, decoding technology of faulty language communication was essential.

"I understood well from meeting him for real. First he is quick-witted. He has the habit of reading the other side's thinking and act. He creates creative ideas in order to achieve his objective. …It looks like he also has a specialty like cooking creative cuisines for the sake of his lovers. He is a stoic martial artist but he is also a tactician. But his senses of values are straightforward. He fastidiously hates warped things. Well, he is still a kid."

"Seems like a charming person isn't he?" One of the Numbers talked honestly.

"That's why whether that guy's subordinates or Arthur too, they cannot raise objection to that guy's correct decision. In reality there is a dictatorship built under the trust. That's why it's fine for us to just watch closely at Hayashizaki Kazuki's thought alone. There is no cowardly method or sacrificing option in that guy's choices."

Just from fragmentary information, Clark wrung out a conclusive possibility.

"He killed Red Metallica… I guess he didn't plan as far as killing though… the perpetrator that destroyed the Slave Battery Factory is not the Indians, but Hayashizaki Kazuki."

There was no proof. Clark occasionally didn't even hesitate to make assumptions that was inside the realm of wild idea.

The most important thing for a ruler was decisiveness. Someone who couldn't decide unless all the proofs were lined up couldn't be said to be decisive. Decisiveness—was the power of imagination and courage.

"Hayashizaki Kazuki is someone that possesses the ability to take action prudently. He has stayed this long in Las Vegas, so surely there must be already some kind of cue that made him notice the existence of slavery here. If he noticed that, Hayashizaki Kazuki cannot tolerate the existence of something like slavery. He cannot avert his eyes. Then is he going to ally with South America? No, he is even more incompatible fundamentally with South America. Hayashizaki Kazuki is a person that accepted civilization and love culture. He enjoys games, he enjoys show attractions, he enjoys cooking."

From reading the report, it could be understood well what Hayashizaki Kazuki liked in Las Vegas.

"Then what is the aim of Hayashizaki Kazuki. …It's my neck. He will cooperate with North America and defeat South America. While making North America win, he will take the neck of the main cause of slavery that is me. If I'm just gone then America can stay America and he won't have any problem. Makes you so grateful that you're going to cry huh."

As if revealing out the hidden cards one after another, Clark kept turning her brain.

Rather than Clark explaining her own thinking to the Numbers around her, she was sorting and deepening her own thinking by continuing to talk. There was almost no interruption from the Numbers around.

"…Is he thinking overambitiously until that far?"

No, rarely, there was someone that would interject.

Still expressionless, Clark turned her gaze to the speaker. The one that opened her mouth was Mary Mayweather Junior. An amazingly skilled boxer. She was a woman whose fighting strength was valued and introduced into Numbers, but in the first place she had the strong personality that asserted herself. But to interject at Clark's pondering, was deviating from [the usual her]. It was an abnormal action that the usual her wasn't supposed to do.

Her abnormal action had some kind of reason… a cause.

"Hayashizaki Kazuki only brought a few number of his troops from Japan here. As expected he cannot seriously stir-up trouble with North America. If he can defeat South America, wouldn't it only be natural to satisfy himself with that and compromise before going back to his country?"

The content of her speech was really plausible—although the act of speaking itself was the one that was strange.

With Mary interjecting, Virginia Dance—nickname Ginny was slightly shaken in her eyes. She was showing a slight subconscious stress. She was losing her calm. Why?

For a while Clark was scrutinizing the situation wordlessly. There was a cause to this for sure…

Mary and Ginny were the two persons left with the role to guide Hayashizaki Kazuki. Were they harboring good will for Hayashizaki Kazuki? It was not impossible. Certainly Hayashizaki Kazuki was a charming person. Further stepping into that possibility… would they chose Hayashizaki Kazuki even over this Clark Moore?

Betrayal—yes, that was also not something impossible she guessed. In the first place these two had a strong sense of justice. They often felt stress towards Clark's decisions and sense of values. That was why the dirtiest part of the slave application system Clark built with Red was hidden from these two.

Did they see the whole story of the slave system, together with Hayashizaki Kazuki?

Aah, now that she thought back Mary's origin was from the slum wasn't she?

Clark opened her mouth once more.

"Hayashizaki Kazuki doesn't like compromising. He is a childish idealist. However because he has the strength able to carry his ideal, he can be recognized as a King(Basileus) in the whole of Japan even by the dirty adults. He is the exact opposite of me huh."

Clark was also recognized as a young King. But what Clark held was not idealism but realism. She carried a thorough realism and continued to prove a mental strength worthy of that. She used any kind of method, win any kind of gamble, and massacred the opposing adults without even lifting an eyebrow.

"Because he is that kind of person, he won't compromise like that. He will aim for my neck for sure."

Clark declared so and closed Mary’s thoughts. She returned her gaze to the document. She didn’t even glance anymore to Mary and Ginny.

She only exposed the actual and hidden cards as needed.

Now, the decision.

“In short, thankfully this is not a problem between countries but a problem between individuals. Hayashizaki Kazuki accepted the country North America, but he absolutely rejected me personally. That idealism is based on Hayashizaki Kazuki’s personal virtue rather than the whole Japan’s policy. If they lose their leader Hayashizaki Kazuki, I guess Japan won’t be too concerned about the existence of slavery. As long as Hayashizaki Kazuki is defeated Japan will just leave. Arthur and Hrotsvit too, if Japan leave then they will finish already getting deeply involved with America. This is really a thankful situation… if it’s a head-on confrontation between the two countries, America cannot win whether it’s against Japan or Britain or Germany after all.”

Was there a possibility of Hrotsvit changing direction to invade America alone?

—No, it wouldn’t happen. She also had already thought about what kind of condition Europe was in right now from the meeting just now. Even though it was not as serious as Japan, but Europe was also facing the threat of Loki・China・Russia. Hrotsvit was bluntly looking down on them just now but their side here was also indifferent to Hrotsvit from the bottom of the heart. She didn’t mind ignoring the woman’s exaggerated appeal.

“We are going to use Japan and defeat South America. When our business with Japan’s cooperation is finished we will make Hayashizaki Kazuki exit the stage. Then we will take an approach to Loki. If we can skillfully play the gap in the confrontation between Japan and Loki, even this minor country of America still has a chance of victory left.”

Clark’s talking around was by no means making a bet on a small chance. Clark Moore liberally used all kinds of methods and won through until here exactly in that kind of match.

“The justice of America will take the crown of the world…!”

The Numbers raised a voice carried by passion.

But looking at the matter just now… it bothered her to not know at all about the secret of the world. Arthur and Hrotsvit, possibly Hayashizaki Kazuki too, there was no mistake that they were moving holding some kind of clue regarding this era of magic. That was what Clark felt while remembering the scene where Arthur was exchanging a gaze with Hrotsvit and made her quiet.

“A fight not between countries but between individuals called Clark Moore and Hayashizaki Kazuki. The most important thing is the timing. While building a structure of cooperation, we are mutually measuring the timing for the betrayal. The advantage is in my side. After all Hayashizaki Kazuki cannot defeat South America with just his own troops. The virtuous Hayashizaki Kazuki has to rely on our army strength in order to save the innocent American people and the slaves. The one who has the privilege to prepare the situation is this side. We can set as many traps as we like."

If she thoroughly pickled at the opponent's idealism, their position was completely reversed.

Catching a good person into a trap was something really easy.

"As long as the Chiefs can just be defeated, we won't have any more business with Hayashizaki Kazuki and his group. Clean up the Japanese bunch by taking advantage of the fight with those Chiefs. Medicine Wheel will be defeated by my hands."

Medicine Wheel—Eimi Moore would be defeated by this hand. Clark felt she unconsciously put strength in her hand that was holding the document. There was no emotion at all that came out in her expression, but when she thought about Eimi, a violent emotion naturally welled up inside her head. Her real little sister that became the Basileus of South America due to the unfortunate destiny.

Even Clark that had decided to use any kind of means inside her heart, had only one emotional fixation. To defeat Eimi Moore with this hand, those Japanese were hindrances. She couldn't watch her little sister sufficiently, and when she noticed her little sister was tainted by some numbskull religion at the university. That was the big sister's responsibility.

If by any chance Hayashizaki Kazuki knew about this Clark Moore's only fixation, then Clark's timing where she would try to remove Kazuki would be completely seen through. She thought of that for a fleeting second. … Though of course the possibility he might possibly learn of this was, endlessly zero.

In preparation for the battle with Medicine Wheel, she had to defeat Hayashizaki Kazuki with enough spare energy left. This stocked power was after all limited by its connection to wealth.

She would easily defeat a Basileus that was above her rank. …Her side had the method to make that possible.

"Jeremy, you understand right? The ability that you have is our trump card."

Clark called to one of the Numbers that was standing by at the side.

Her most loyal childhood friend returned a reply "Understood" with a calm voice.

Jeremy Barrett. She was younger than her but, her history in the gang was even longer than Clark. She was a destined veteran. During the course since Clark entered the organization until she suddenly rose in the world, Jeremy immediately saw through Clark's character, adored Clark's ideology, and became a loyal follower.

Possessing an excellent combat skill, she constantly put her body in danger and carried out as Clark's bodyguard whether in the light or shadow. Since Clark rose as the boss of the gang, and then when she further gained the power as King, Jeremy continued to become Clark's most reliable combat specialist subordinate. When Red kept becoming more emotionally unstable day by day, the time Clark put Jeremy at her side was naturally increasing.

When American Justice Mythology showed their figures in North America, Jeremy also accomplished a contract with the Diva <Frontier Spirit>.

The girl who got through the most numerous battlefields in North America accomplished a perfect synchronization with her contracted Diva, and she also succeeded in manifesting an [Original One] that only she could use.

That was Clark’s trump card.

Diva granted their contractor ten Summoning Magic to call their power in the real world, but a Diva would create a unique and original new magic and granted it to a contractor that was bound to them in even stronger affinity.

It would become the one and only magic from the mix of the Diva and the contractor’s spirituality.

<Frontier Spirit> that symbolized the challenge toward difficulty, and Jeremy that held 100% adoration toward Clark’s ideology. The magic born from the mix of spirituality between these two was—exactly a present intended towards Clark. It was as if Clark’s longstanding desire was turned just like that into magic.

[Giant Killing(Super Star Shooting, Blame of Scream)]

Its effect was—loading Jeremy’s important thing into a bullet, and seal those that corresponded to what was loaded.

A magic in order for the weak to throw away everything and defeat the strong.

“In order to seal Hayashizaki Kazuki’s power of Basilleus, how much bet is needed?”

Jeremy was already fighting Hayashizaki Kazuki once—she had finished assessing him.

“I need to bet all the magic power that I have.”

Jeremy answered shortly. The sealing affixed to the target was just a temporary thing, but the thing that was loaded into the bullet as the bet would be lost forever. That would mean using and then throwing away Jeremy’s life as a warrior. But if she paid the compensation until that much then—it was not impossible.

“That’s just fine. If the Basileus’ power can be sealed with that then it’s good.”

Clark didn’t hesitate against the risk and the compensation. She wouldn’t reconsider even if she had to sacrifice her comrade.

She already had the determination to throw away everything except her pride.

She betted everything except her pride, kept winning through ice thin gambles, and rose from a small delinquent until a gangster.

“However, that man can evade my bullet.”

Clark dropped her sight to the report in her hand once more. She naturally looked at that page. The most important page. Hayashizaki Kazuki possessed the evasion ability as if he was seeing through the future.

He was a monster that won by decision against the strongest boxing king in North America, [Defense Master] Mary Mayweather Junior, in his first time boxing experience. Using word like monster was still too lukewarm. The meaning couldn’t be understood. Reading the report, Clark was honestly feeling awe.

If Jeremy’s Original One missed its target than it was game over.

“Wish we could make them acknowledge that I and my bodyguard Jeremy won’t come out in the battle with the Chiefs, with the intention of sniping Hayashizaki Kazuki from the shadow in the middle of the battle huh.”

The first plan was torn and discarded. Because of Hayashizaki Kazuki’s quick-wittedness she had to go out to the battlefield.

“Certainly the proof that Medicine Wheel won’t come out to the battlefield is insufficient. I cannot quibble unreasonably because he picked at that fact. If that’s the case… it will need a little fiddling so you can hit Hayashizaki Kazuki with the magic bullet. Now then… what way is available?”

There was a plan. There had been a trap laid out already at the discussion just now.

Even while she was asking what way was available, Clark didn’t request for an opinion from her surroundings and gave a hand sign to the Numbers to get out of the room.

The close aides wordlessly bowed and left from Clark’s room.

Toward Jeremy who was the last to leave the room, Clark exchanged looks with her in a glance.

Only Jeremy was left in front of the door.

“Jeremy. Put Mary and Ginny under control. You get what’s the meaning of control right? So that they won’t think of anything strange. Both of them are already double-crossing us.”

“Understood.” Jeremy flatly replied and exited the room. The conversation inside the cold room was all over with that. What left was just waiting. Just like always, while saving more wealth.

Part 5

“The shut-in that swoops down upon the positive space called intensive training… Kamimura Itsuki sanjou.” (TN:Sanjou, calling in/visiting. It’s also the catchphrase of some giant robot anime when they launch, don’t know which though.)

Kamimura-san in her gothic dress was taking a weird pose while swooping down upon the hotel Yggdrasil’s courtyard.

“Sorry to call you into a place and time that doesn’t agree with you.”

Kamimura-san shook her head left and right.

“Even though I came outside my room, if it’s Kazuki that calls for me, there is a part of me that thinks that it’s not all bad. …By, by any chance is it because I have been class-changed from a shut-in into a riajuu that has a boyfriend!”

Kamimura-san suddenly made a face of realization ‘hah’ and began to tremble rattlingly.

“For me to stand on such a cinderella stage of youth… when I think about it calmly it’s just too unsuited for me that nervousness and nausea are welling up unstoppably inside me, uu…!”

“I like that aspect of Kamimura-san who looks cute like a small animal you know.”

When Kazuki tightly embraced the rattled Kamimura-san, she raised a strange voice.

“Hawawa—! It’s scary that a handsome boyfriend is acting too kind to an unpopular woman like me—! Messiah—!!”

Beside the two of them a light of magic power was produced, {Hee—yy, you handsome guy} in an appearance wearing sunglasses with the military jacket of the army, the funky and American Amaterasu appeared as an avatar.

{Try to lift Itsuki-chan just like that for a little bit.}

Kazuki followed what he was told, he put strength into his hugging arms and lifted up Kamimura-san. Kamimura-san went ‘kyaa- kyaa-‘ while swinging around her arms and legs.

“This reminds me, when we got off the ferris wheel while I was carrying her in a princess-carry I also thought this but, most of her weight has come back huh.”

{HAHAHA, she will soon have a potbelly like my wife.}

He left aside the American joke that was not funny in the slightest from the highest god of the Japanese Mythology. He was not here to talk about Kamimura-san's fatness.

Kamimura-san was a deceased person. The soul of Kamimura-san that escaped from the unforeseen death was preserved by Amaterasu in the Gate of the Celestial Rock Cave. However no matter how Amaterasu was a chief god that governed over life, she couldn't go as far as reviving the flesh body of her contractor who had her contract broken in one occasion. Thereupon with Kazuki getting along well with Kamimura-san, a circuit of bond could be formed between them and through there Solomon Mythology's magic power could be supplied to Kamimura-san. Combining the two powers of Amaterasu and Solomon Mythology, Kamimura-san was successfully resurrected.

But when Kamimura-san's own attachment towards life thinned, her very existence itself would also get thinner and she would fall into an ambiguous state. Kamimura-san right after she came back from the underworld had a hollow weight when he lifted her up, as if she was a hologram girl that had no real body.

But now her weight had already been close to her original weight.

Right now perhaps her weight was a little bit lighter than Lotte who was the lightest among his comrades.

"Yes… right now I have become unwilling to die compared to before." Kamimura-san said. "But in the case that Kazuki betrays me, then I'm going to die at the speed of light. That's why right now I'm happy but uneasy… it's scary to be hated…"

"I won't do anything like betraying Kamimura-san. Absolutely."

Kazuki stroked Kamimura-san's head a lot. Kamimura-san leaked out a voice "Hawawawa~". While frolicking around like that, Kazuki asked something he was concerned about to Amaterasu.

"Then anytime now, will I be able to use the power as the King of Japanese Mythology?"

Kazuki had the principle to not conquer a girl for the sake of power. However, if he deepened his bond with Kamimura-san, Kazuki was supposed to be able to wield the authority as the King of Japanese Mythology.

"Hawaa-!" Kamimura-san raised her voice.

"Tha, that's so isn't it? Kazuki is only making friends with me for the sake of power isn't it? Fufufu, it's okay, no problem. If I think in reverse as long as Kazuki needs the power of Japanese Mythology that means Kazuki will value me importantly. I'm not concerned at all. I have never expected to be loved or anything as myself in the first place…!"

"Something like power is just an extra Kamimura-san. You are cute after all."

Kazuki lightly kissed the cheek of Kamimura-san who once more fell to her negativity.

“Hawaa—! My cheek is kissed again…-!!”

It felt like treating a kid kissing the cheek, however tasting the sensation of the cute and chubby cheek with his lips had a different good feeling than a kiss lips-to-lips, it had its own charm. *chuu chuu* Kazuki tasted Kamimura-san’s cheek many times as if pecking on it.

Kamimura-san turned bright red saying “awawa” and curled herself.

“Bu, but doing something like this at best, is like kid treatment, it’s nothing more than being affectionate to a pet, no difference at all… yo, you are not considering someone like me as a lady at a-…”

“If you say that kind of thing then I’ll do this.”

Kazuki went around Kamimura-san’s back and rubbed Kamimura-san’s breast squishily from behind. He immediately found the sensitive tips across the fabric of the no-bra goth-loli clothes and he pinched it with his finger tips.

“Aa-♡ That place is no-♡ That place is sensitive so it will quickly feel good, it’s no good-♡”

“I won’t do this kind of thing to a pet you know.”

When Kazuki repeatedly pestered the throbbing nipple that had been developed by Kamimura-san herself, Kamimura-san “aa-♡” in just a moment went gasping and writhing around. And then the largest size heart mark flew at him.

Receiving waves of love attack from Kazuki, Kamimura-san’s face was dazed and reddened and she finally recognized herself saying “I am riajuu…” (TN: Just now it was said with broken English)

“Amazingg—…you have completely mastered the way to corner Itsuki-chan.”

Amaterasu opened her eyes wide.

After all not everyone was skillful like Mio in acting spoiled.

“Leaving this aside, with Susanoo’s defeat the full authority of Japanese Mythology was transferred to me, and it seemed that I became able to send that to you through the well-connected circuit of bond. With something like that, now you are already able to thoroughly wield the King’s Authority of the Japanese Mythology you know.”

“What kind of power is that? No~, it doesn’t matter at all what power is that because it’s nothing but an extra of Kamimura-san though! I don’t have any interest at all in that though~! But I want to know, just in case!”

“It’s fine already about something like that.” (TN: She uses Kansai dialect here.)

Kamimura-san poked at Kazuki’s cheek sharply with a tsukkomi.

“Anyway leaving the joke aside, I think it will practically become a terribly important key. At the battle on board of the ship I was using Solomon’s power once. And then when I confirmed it with Mary later on, she said that the matter about that had been completely reported to the King. That cunning Clark Moore should have already prepared some kind of counter-measure against the power of King Solomon.”

Kazuki recalled the gaze of Clark that was directed to him. That eye was an eye that looked forward to a sure victory. He couldn’t possibly think of her as having no plan. She had already prepared something.

“If there is a weapon that they don’t know about, it can become a reserve I think.”

{Then I’ll teach you, the King’s Authority of Japanese Mythology, that is <Power of Harmony>. It brings together the power of your comrades and uses them optimally. A power that boosts you many times over.}

“Using optimally?”

{Specifically, gathering and redistribution. For example a magic power with aggregate amount 100 exists inside Otonashi Kaguya who has possible amount of instantaneous magic power emission 60. The magic power's aggregate amount is like a water tank, and the emission amount is like the tank's faucet. The elf Hiakari Koyuki has aggregate amount 120 and somewhat large emission amount 40. That kind of number fits doesn't it. Even though there is 100 magic power amount in Kaguya but because the amount she can fire 'boom' once can only reach until 60, she cannot invoke her level 10 magic [Seventh Inferno] that has magic power consumption 80 by herself alone.}

"That's why she needs to chant by combining power through chorus magic to use level 10 magic huh."

{There, if Kazuki uses the <Power of Harmony>, you can gather magic power and redistribute them to another. Taking 40 each from Kaguya and Hiakari, then if you gather those into Kaguya she can chant magic that consumes 80… you can do such a thing.}

"In other words… level 10 magic can be used much easier compared to all those times until now?"

{Of course the chanting itself is needed, but because there is no need to take time matching magic power wavelengths it should be far easier to use compared to chorus magic. Next as a simpler way to use it, Kazuki who goes through a fierce battle and get exhausted with only 3 magic power amount remaining in you can gather magic power from everyone and recover, or something like temporary doping in order to fight a powerful enemy, and so on.}

"It's Spirit Bomb isn't it? Everyone of our comrades, they share their spirit to Kazuki!" (TN: Reference to Dragon Ball)

Kamimura-san interrupted with something incomprehensible.

{Though if you stuffed too much magic power you will burst and die. Sorry about this plain ability.}

"No, thank you. If from now on the battle intensified, there will be a big difference whether I have this ability or not."

Everyone used up almost all of their magic power and fell down, everyone gathered their few magic power all into him and he somehow stood up, he then challenged the Basileus into one-to-one fight, something like that… he wished he could be spared of such last moment situations though.

{If you still want more new power then you have to master the three Sacred Treasures I think. You surely understand from the fight with Susanoo, but in Japanese Mythology the three Sacred Treasures possess considerable strength. That's also one of the factors that make our Authority become quiet plain.}

Kazuki recalled how Ikousai used <Yata no Kagami> and <Yasakani no Magatama> in their full-spec by half turning into Susanoo. She displayed outrageous ability of using auto-defense and teleportation consuming almost no magic power at all.

“Can I use them skillfully until that much in this short time? I am using them often in my training everyday.”

{That’s quite difficult—. After all Sacred Treasure is reticence. Rather than hitting it off with them in one go it’s more like you need to laboriously accumulate time with them.}

“Then to use them as good as Ikousai’s level, there is no other way than to get Amaterasu possessing me just like how Ikousai was possessed by Susanoo then.”

{I’m not recommending that okay—. I’m not thinking of taking over Kazuki’s flesh or anything, but with a human that had already got contracted with Lemegeton, if then you get further possessed by a voluminous Diva like a chief god from another Mythology, you head is going to get ‘baa—ng” like a watermelon.}

Even so, if from here on they lost here, everything would end… that kind of battle might be increasing in the future.

{In that case it’s Itsuki-chan’s turn you know. A lot of Amaterasu’s(My) Summoning Magic has commonality with the hidden power of the three Sacred Treasures after all, I think if you train together with Itsuki-chan you will make progress.”

“Just leave it to this coach Jonny yeah—”

Kamimura-san whose nipple was still hard from the messing around just now puffed up her chest.

“Of course that’s exactly the reason I was calling for Kamimura-san.”

In other words he was going to practice his Sacred Treasures with Kamimura-san’s Summoning Magic as his model.

“I’m really a convenient existence. Are you really—? Really not aiming for power—?”

Kamimura-san chuchkled “fuhihi” while lightly slapping Kazuki’s cheek *peshi peshi*. Really, what a great bargain that was full of perks, this conquered heroine Kamimura-san.

In Las Vegas, there was a change visible to the eye that appeared. The residents began to evacuate outside the dome, in exchange the mechanized soldiers and Magika Stigmas were entering.

“This is, are you planning to completely prepare Las Vegas as the ground of the decisive battle?”

Looking at the situation where the whole army was gathering, as expected Kazuki became uneasy, he then asked Clark who he happened to see taking command of the city.

“That’s my plan. I’m gathering all the military force of North America here.”

“Isn’t that too dangerous? Even the Indians might notice the movement of military force in a scale this large. What are you going to do if a part of them attack another city to shake us?”

If a city was felled then an enormous damage would come out.

To say nothing of how the Indians changed death into their power.

“That’s a needless worry. I made all the spies that I have to infiltrate South America’s camp. They were gathering information. According to the information of the lucky guys that survived and came home, there is no mistake that the way those Indians are gathering their battle strength is to aim at Las Vegas.”

Kazuki’s expression reflexively stiffened hearing that reply.

This person, she treated human’s life and death so lightly all the time…

“Besides the other side also acknowledged that our side is the better one in a battle of information. From the other side’s point of view, rather than competing in wit reading each other’s hand, they surely desire a head-on fight collision more.”

She had a point. But thinking how if her reading missed there would be an enormous damage that came out, if it was Kazuki, this was a choice that he would be absolutely unable to take.

“My bad but this is the way how I do things since I was just a brat, how I survived until now. This is how the weak fight.”

A single bet from a sharp reading. As if telling him to stop meddling more than this, Clark turned her back to him and left.

At first Kazuki was disgusted at Clark’s way that didn’t care of the method that she used. But right now he was beginning to feel dreadfulness from her thorough persistence.

“Perhaps I might get along well with that side’s boss yeah. I get the feelin’ that we’re the same kind of people. She ain’t doing anything half-way. How about you take a lesson a little too?”

Suddenly Shouko showed her face from Kazuki’s side saying that.

“The same kind of people…? Shouko shared the same realism with her but, you and that woman are not similar at all right?”

Kazuki tilted his head. Shouko blinked her eyes as if to say that Kazuki’s reaction was truly unexpected.

“Just from our realism ain’t we quite similar already…?”

“Because you take consideration for your surroundings quite much right? Joking around, when someones ask you a favor you will say [can’t be helped huh] or the like while taking care of it really well more than needed. You also like to take care of those younger than you, don’t you? At first I thought that you were calculating and haggling, but I’m gradually seeing your plain face. …What, what’s with that face?”

Shouko was making a face as if she was biting a bitter bug.

“Are you embarrassed?” Kazuki poked at her shoulder.

“…Are you an idiot? Well, if a naïve guy like you thinks like that then it’s just as planned. Anyway this time I don’t really have any motivation to help. It’s pretty dodgy is what I’m sayin’.”

“Well, I’m not going to ask you or Arthur to actively fight at the front lines.”

Both of them were [someone that try to know Kazuki and came into contact with him], but they were by no means [Kazuki’s comrades]. He couldn’t see their positivity levels, the Power of Harmony was also… seemed unusable at the two.

“Ou, then I’m gonna take a rest yeah.”

Looking at Shouko who was purposefully saying spiteful things like that, it made him wonder whether she actually wanted to be relied on a little.

“But, it’s fine for you to not fight, however use that Sacred Treasure that looked like a map that you used before.”

“…You mean <Taikyokuzu(Grand Zenith Map)>?”

Kazuki nodded. “No matter what kind of Mythology it is, there will surely be unknown magic. If it’s impossible to predict, then it’s important to immediately grasp the situation and deal with it. After all, this time we are in the receiving side.”

“So you are thinking that they will launch surprise attacks with an unknown method then.”

“There is no way they will come to attack in a simple way.”

Shouko sneered “fuh”, then she nodded saying “Can’t be helped huh.”

Chapter 3 – Offense and Defense Between Mythologies

For the Indians, rattlesnake was the most dangerous mystery, a neighbor that ought to be worshiped.

Rattlesnakes didn’t attack because they felt like it. They always wielded that lethal poison only limited for their own defense when danger was approaching. When they were going to bite they would gave out a rattling sound, warning the opponent to run away from their poison. A behavior of the wise could be seen from that.

Flesh bitten by a rattlesnake would rot black, crumbling into pieces, becoming the earth. It was grotesque, but it was not a cursed death. It was a return to nature. Those who committed crime, those who acted aggressive, they returned to nature due to poison, reincarnated into a new life.

In a lot of cases, it was said in legend that they would be reincarnated into a new rattlesnake.

Rattlesnake that was once human guided humans to not commit crime with their poison, and they became the protector that granted the divine protection of mystery(medicine) toward the innocent people in case they faced calamity.

Therefore, rattlesnake was the great agent of the Great Spirit(Mother Nature’s Will).

Consequently it would appear at places where there was sin. Slipping through gaps, slipping out from underground, and it even further came from the sky—turning into a zigzagging lightning.

The lightning of judgment from the sky was the snake that descended from the sky.

Each time that judgment descended there was no place to run—if there was no room for repentance, they could only accept death. After all in the first place, it was not something to be feared.

That was why the girl was—secretly chanting a spell.

“Sleeping in the ridge of soldiers’ creek, agents that were once brethren, from the gaps of things, from the bottom of the earth, from the cracks of the heavens, show your figure, count the sins in the human’s land.”

That spell chanting was undetectable, even for experts of perception like Charlotte Liebenfrau.

“Rattlesnake Coming(Rattlesnake Arrive Here).”

That was a surprise attack.

The dome city Las Vegas was destroyed in a flash.

The asphalt of the ground split. The ceiling of the dome was smashed and rained down. Buildings were tore up from small cracks.

And then the asphalt’s crack, the ceiling’s crack, the cracks everywhere in the city—from all the cracks, dozens of snakes were creeping out.

It was a small mercy that the general public had already finished evacuating. The ones who were stationed in the city were only a small scale force of North America’s Knight Order—the majority of the main force was already moved along the Colorado River, waiting for the attack. This was a surprise attack that slipped through that.

The cooperating people that came from Japan, Kazuki and his group and the highest commander Clark and her elites were coming to a halt in Las Vegas. Kazuki, Clark and the others rushed out from Las Vegas in great panic and fell into chaos.

The snakes were choosing from people with weak magic power—they twined around the mechanized soldiers, forming a clump and bit all at once. The victims writhed and resisted, but before long their defensive magic power were used up. The people who lost their defensive magic power and lost their resistance towards the poison were—changed into snakes in the blink of an eye and their position changed into new attackers. The snakes were increasing. The knights lost their leadership in the nightmarish scene and ran around.

“Calm down you idiots!!”

Clark Moore yelled. There was no one in this country who didn’t feel fear from this voice.

At the same time a storm of bullets drove off the snakes at Clark’s surrounding. The girl who would stand by beside Clark without fail when Clark was standing on the battlefield—Jeremy Barret was holding two handguns. Rapid fire that couldn’t be imagined from handguns pierced all the snakes accurately, it also saved the attacked people.

However the snakes were also not something soft that would die from a single shot of magic filled bullets.

Kazuki rushed out from hotel Yggdrasil and observed the situation.

It was a dreadful disastrous scene.

First they had to grasp how many snakes were lurking and where.

“Shouko!” Kazuki chose one from among his group and called out.

“Can’t be helped huh.” That woman took out a piece of scroll that was a Sacred Treasure and unfolded it in front of her eyes.

“See through, <Onmyou Taikyokuzu>! Shingan Kaikon, Tenchi Shizen no Zu!!” (TN: Yin Yang Grand Zenith Map, Divine Eye Soul Release, Heaven and Earth’s Nature Map)

Taikyokuzu was softly floating, it sucked vast magic power from Shouko and began shooting widely at the surrounding area. It was as if a giant net was spreading—granting all perceived information to Shouko.

“King! From the military boundary line, the South America’s large army is invading all at once!!”

A brave messenger was rushing into the panicked Las Vegas.

“Is this a magic that has never been seen before!?”

While waiting for Shouko’s reply, Kazuki questioned Clark.

“Right.” Clark nodded.

“But the strength of one of this snake is… it’s not a type of magic that summons Demon Beasts. Every single one were originally Magika Stigma. A magic that transforms allies into snakes and sends them to the enemy territory.”

It mercilessly defeated the mechanized soldiers, and it wouldn’t die easily even when they were hit by Jeremy’s bullets. That analysis was surely accurate.

A powerful elite squad was transformed into snakes due to special magic while infiltrating here.

The Indians of South America were retaining a trump card of surprise attack magic.

“This is the work of the Chief that manipulates snake spirit—Dancing Snake.”

Kazuki drew out Ame no Murakumo and gloomily cleared away the attacking snakes.

“We need to grasp the situation. Shouko, how is it!?”

When Kazuki asked with a loud voice, Clark also directed her sight at Shouko.

Shouko made a bitter face. “It’s better to talk with a small voice you know.” She was saying that it was better to not give Clark information.

“The priority is to minimize the damage to the city and the people, idiot!” Kazuki immediately rebuked—Shouko was making a flabbergasted face.

“Don’t get absentminded, how is it?”

“Ri, right. …-geez, it’s been a few years since I got scolded by other people, it’s stupid to make mistakes. I’m searching for the enemy roughly in the scope of 100 kilos around. There are 70 snakes infiltrating inside Las Vegas dome. The infiltration route is the sky, earth, and from the cracks of buildings, they suddenly warped here into those. It must be a Myth that has that kind of concept. At Colorado river several thousand soldiers are in the middle of a march. As expected I can’t count them.”

“Seems like it’s impossible to bring all of their forces here using this magic. And so they only bring 70 elites inside here to spread chaos while marching their main force then.”

Elite—the snakes that were attacking people were starting to use Summoning Magic too. Magika Stigmas were transformed into snake appearance, and they could use their original Summoning Magic at the same time as obtaining the snake ability. Magic shockwaves were occurring here and there.

“Not just the number of the snakes, can you get where they are and how many!?”

Clark immediately grasped the ability that Shouko used and handed down orders to the messenger without waiting for the reply.

“Evacuate the soldiers that are still remaining inside the dome, get everyone to link up with the force at the Colorado river! Intercept the enemy’s main force by you guys! Only the Numbers and I, also the reinforcements from Japan, are going to deal with the snakes that invaded inside the dome!”

And then she turned back to Shouko. “Chinese. You are Shouko if I remember right. So that the soldier that retreated outside the dome doesn’t get attacked by the snakes, give out instruction to your group around you. While grasping the snakes distributed positions, hit them in turn starting from the guys that are in danger right now like whack-a-mole.”

“I’m not your subordinate y’know?”

“Shouko, I’m begging too. Please do that.” Kazuki also interjected.

“Looks like an ally that gets done in by the snakes are turned into a snake and becomes an enemy. If it keeps like this the enemy will multiply. It’s bad saying it like this but, it’s better for the normal soldiers that are not too strong to be gone from here.”

Even while talking like that, Kazuki’s comrades and the Numbers were rushing around in order to help the soldiers in their surroundings, hitting hard at the snakes. But rather than rushing around blindly, it was necessary to detect the location of soldiers that fell into a greater pinch and prioritizing helping them.

It was better to control the chaos even a second faster, making elites clash against elites and other soldiers againsts other soldiers.

“Chih-. Well… That’s a rational decision. You bastards, listen to my orders!” Shouko briskly gave out instruction “You go there!” “You are over there!” to the comrades attacking the snakes around, and also so that the snakes couldn’t pursue the soldiers that began retreating, she spread out an encirclement like whack-a-mole. In the first place Shouko was also a commander that managed an organization.

“Aah- geez! This snake, is strong you know!?”

Mio raised a scream. The snake was moving around slitheringly and ran around from simple attack magic. When Kanae and Kohaku were chasing the snakes around, the snakes were chanting attack magic and defense magic. The snakes couldn’t be differentiated from each other based on their appearances, but every single one was an elite that had a few openings that could be taken advantage of.

“Funyaa!!!!!!” Mio who was in high spirits and moved too far forward was bitten by a snake.

That snake was—chanting a spell while biting, releasing magic power light.

…That was bad!

“O lone aloof beast in the mountain, repeating life and death at each turning of season, thy art the personification of Samsara…”

Still biting at Mio, the snake’s body swelled up and it was turning huge.

“Grizzly Coming(Gray Bear Arrive Here)!”

That body expanded, transforming into a giant bear that might have passed over five meters.

Strong fangs that were in a different league than when it was a snake, thick claw, were sinking into Mio’s defensive magic power.

Kazuki poured magic power into the pendant-type Magic Dress on his chest—[Zekorbeni]. The Zekorbeni started up and the power of Phoenix flowed into it.

The small pendant-type Magic Dress changed into flame armor that covered his whole body.

He then directly released magic without incantation.

“O bird of paradise whose body is carrying the light of heaven, answer my accusation and burn to ash the sin of the surface! Israel Judgment!!”

A thick beam blew away the giant bear that was attacking Mio from the side. The bear staggered and released Mio. …It was only staggered receiving a level 6 magic that stressed destructive power.

A spec that surpassed humans overwhelmingly—even a magic that possessed super offensive ability for a human, was not like that for bear.

Bear—for every animal, the weaker they were the more they relied on a group, there was no existence as aloof as a mature bear on the earth. Its figure quietly alone inside the mountain came out as mystical.

Lion was commonly called as the king of a hundred beasts, but for the Indians they revered the bear as the supreme being. Bear was [the king of a hundred beasts]. After all lion was forming a pack, but bear didn’t.

Clark yelled a name.

“The Chief that controlled bear spirit—Standing Bear!”

That guy was also chief…!

“Kazuki, leave that guy to me! …O divine protection of warrior, double the megin whirling in my body! The will of god urging to unlimited fights, in this body! Meginjord!!”

Beatrix covered her whole body with strengthening magic,

“FUHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA—!” she cut in while laughing hard and firmly grappled with the bear.

“GUGAAAAAAAAAAAAA!” The bear roared trying to squash Beatrix.

“BEAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!” Beatrix roared back.

A competition of strength between Beatrix and a bear… what a terrific picture.

Kazuki also participated in driving away the snakes. “Hayashizaki Kazuki, come that way!” Shouko turned to him and yell. From the building at the side, a snake was slithering out.

This snake… each time it moved it didn’t use magic power so it was hard to sense! It was far faster than a human without even using Enchant Aura!

The snake that was drawing near Kazuki unnoticed released light and grew bigger.

“O friend, o neighbor of the lovable great plain… thy flesh becomes our flesh. Thy blood becomes our wisdom. The once lost blessing, once again to us…”

That snake was transforming into a sublime woman with pure white curly long hair and pure white leather clothes wrapping her body. There were a pair of horns growing manly at her head, but her expression was showing a soft smile. The woman was still sitting in a mysterious stance, while floating in the air.

“White Buffalo Coming(White Wise Ox Arrive Here).”

When the white woman held her hand to the sky—the dome’s ceiling crumbled even further, then from the exposed sky, countless arrows made from bone poured down to Kazuki like a heavy rain where he couldn’t even open his eyes.

There was no premonition of magic power, Kazuki couldn’t immediately defend using defensive magic.

“Pierce the far away, <Doutanuki>! Battou Kaikon—Tenran Kamaitachi!!”

But Kohaku swung her Sacred Treasure <Doutanuki>. The gale from that sword blade averted the arrows.

The white woman held aloft her other hand to the ground. Thereupon, the surrounding snakes grew as big as anacondas, enlarging—wide range reinforcement magic.

Buffalo—the livelihood of the prairie Indians were all supported by the buffalos that inhabited the Great Plains. They tied their life with the flesh and blood of buffalo, they turned skin and bone into clothes and weapons, even into houses. For them nature and buffalo were not mere hunting targets, they considered buffalo as the messenger from Mother Nature. Buffalo tested human race how they would come into contact with Mother Nature, it promised eternal blessing to the Indians if they were always modest.

Therefore when the white people decided to massacre the Indians, they began by first destroying the buffalo.

In legend there was a narration about the honored messenger that enlightened the Indians how to live as Indians, the [White Wise Ox].

Clark yelled a name.

“The strongest Chief that carry the white buffalo—Sitting Bull!”

“Put that hand out of the way!”

Kazuki sensed that Sitting Bull’s hand which was pointing at the ground was strengthening all the snakes on the battlefield and slashed at it.

Sitting Bull looked defenseless, yet by just holding up her hand that was directed to the sky, this time it was countless bone spears that were produced. She intercepted Kazuki with the tip of the spear right from the front.

This time Kazuki evaded by Foresighting the will that was created even before the magic power. Since he fought Ilyailiya and Ikousai, Kazuki was able to do that if he cleared his mind to the limit.

Sitting Bull flew behind glidingly while still in a sitting position.

"Wait-!" The one who could reliably dodge the attack just now was most likely only himself, then Kohaku and Hikaru-senpai who could manipulate wind. And then the woman who was strengthening the snakes had to be defeated first.

But before Kazuki could try to chase her, more snakes were slithering out without any sign beforehand.

"It has been a while, Hayashizaki Kazuki. I promised you that the next time we meet is the time for our battle."

The snake talked with a voice he remembered hearing before.

"O friend that remain the last even as foreigner, o war friend! Let's fly the banner of revolution towards the civilization society together! Now, neigh madly high to the sky!"

That snake swelled up along with light—into a female warrior that was imposingly straddling a large horse.

"Crazy Horse Coming(Crazy Running Horse Arrive Here)…!"

"iIIIIIIIIIIIN!!" The large horse raised an earth-shaking neigh that didn't shame its large body. Magic power was—exaltation of fighting spirit was filling that voice.

No, it was a berserk fighting spirit. The snakes that were enlarged like anacondas were writhing madly. The vigor of their movements were further increased. Their long bodies constricted the knights, or their long tails slapped away the approaching humans. Their released magic were also increasing in strength because of their amplified mental power.

The power of cavalry that rushed at the very front at the battlefield…! The cavalry inspired their comrades with their bravery.

The female warrior on the large horse faced Kazuki and swung her long spear. Kazuki parried that and shouted out the woman's name. Even Kazuki knew about this woman.

"Crazy Horse!"

Horse—on the American continent horse had gone extinct in the far away ancient time, they didn't live in America until the westerners brought them here. The Indians were bewildered and called the horse as medicine dog, but they immediately became close friends with each other. The Indians became even far more skilled at riding horse than the westerners, horse was an indispensable comrade in the war against the white people. The horses chose the Indians rather than the westerners. (TN: Looks like for the Indians, the word medicine has a mystical meaning.)

All the other nature's animals passed away, but horse existed for the Indians beside them until the very end.

Not just horse. One more snake appeared in front of Kazuki. Its body transformed along with light, turning into a charming woman with a naked body that was wrapped by a snake. As if dancing, the woman swayed her limbs bewitchingly. …There was no mistake, this woman is the snake Chief, Dancing Snake.

The woman chanted. “O sky rumble, become zigzag light, burn and destroy the house built on sand! Rattle Lightning(Lightning Snake Descend)!!”

From the ceiling of the dome city that had been considerably damaged, pitch black lightning streamed inside like an invading thunder cloud. The thunder cloud was sounding rattling sounds like a menacing snake while breaking up, turning into countless snakes of light raining down. But Kazuki had already predicted that. The problem was the large scale of the destruction.

Kazuki exchanged looks with Kamimura-san. Kamimura-san didn’t have Foresight technique, but she properly understood the meaning of Kazuki’s signal and what was expected from her.

“Cloud on top of serpent, we in the sky are the throne of god. The oath of the nation’s tutelary god is taken in the steel of white cloud… the raised sword is, Ame no Murakumo! Shirakumo no Yoroi!!”

An imitation Ame no Murakumo was created in Kamimura-san’s hand, above her head billowing white clouds were whirling. Kazuki was also summoning the same magic phenomenon from his Sacred Treasure.

“The oath of protection right here, <Ame no Murakumo>… Battou Kaikon, Shirakumo no Yoroi!”

The overflowing two layer of white clouds were becoming protective armors on the bodies of his comrades and the retreating North American knights one after another. Even with the two of them they couldn’t reach as far as the Numbers, Kazuki apologized inside his heart.

The lightning produced from the black cloud, and the vapor armor produced from the white cloud opposed each other.

The moisture wrapped in magic power absorbed the electricity in order to guide its flow, scattering them apart and turning it ineffective.

“O metal of sandstorm, become a covering blessing on my cursed body… Desperado!”

On the other hand without even needing Kazuki worrying about her, that Jeremy was giving rise to a sandstorm that acted as a large sheet, flapping above the heads of her comrade Numbers.

That sheet created from iron sand also absorbed electricity and led it to the ground where it was neutralized.

“You showed an opening!”

However Kazuki that was using the Sacred Treasure’s power was—blown away by a powerful attack.

Crazy Horse concentrated all the charging power of her horse into the tip of her spear, commencing a violent thrust. Kazuki received the fierce large swing completely and was blown away. Of course he had read that movement, but he prioritized protecting everyone. Kazuki caved into a building wall.

“Trample, my friend(Aparosa)!’

Crazy Horse’s beloved horse stood up with its two back legs and stepped on Kazuki who was caved in the wall.

“URARARAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA—!!”

Crazy Horse didn’t miss the chance and also released countless thrusts at Kazuki with the spear she held on top of the horse.

“O accumulated wisdom throughout human history, become layers of armor that armored my body! Heavily, thickly, reject all brutality! Seusenhofer!!”

Kazuki immediately invoked defensive magic, covering his body with silver armor. The silver armor and vapor armor overlapped, shining in sparkles.

But the two front legs of the horse that was like an elephant, and then the fierce spear thrusts—when the three thick metal stakes ran amok on Kazuki’s body, the two layer defense was annihilated in a flash.

They didn’t even give him time to escape…!

“Not hesitating to hurt myself too if it curses thee… shared pain is my joy! Cry and shout at the mirror reflection! Suicide Black!!”

Kazuki barely invoked his next spell.

It was a magic to make the opponent falter from reflected illusionary pain that matched with the opponent’s attack.

“URARAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAa-Iii!!”

He invoked that with the goal of blunting her fierce attack but—the Indians’ brave warrior didn’t falter at all.

Despite how she should be feeling intense pain as if her whole body was torn into pieces, Crazy Horse’s eyes were bloodshot red just like her name, and immersed all her will into [trampling].

It was not the way a human should be. What made the girl keep like this was—her trance(immersion) towards her faith. When a believer’s faith reached the extremes, just like what Kamimura-san said before, even inside any kind of pain and fear, they would interpret it as a gift from god.

There was no substantial defensive effect from [Suicide Black]. Kazuki’s defensive magic power was kept being shaven in large chunks.

“O stream of atmosphere, stretch to my hand, become the spear that repulse the hated enemy! What stretch into my hand is the tip of the storm!! Maimuur!!”

Hikaru-senpai whose whole body was shining golden from reinforcement magic was holding the spear that created storms in both her hands, thrusting at Crazy Horse from the side. Even the brave horse and warrior were disoriented “GUH-!”, the bloodshot insane eyes moved at Hikaru-senpai and she swung her spear in return.

“Uwaa-!? Hikaru-senpai barely blocked it, but overmatched by the overwhelming power she was unsteady on her feet and staggered.

But in that moment Kazuki was already helped.

"Shut and seal, <Yasakani no Magatama>! Kaicho Kaikon, Hachimon Shibari!!" (TN: String Open Soul Release, Eight Gate Binding)

One of the three Sacred Treasures—the power of <Yasakani no Magatama> was liberated.

The string of magatama that was wrapped on his left wrist was instantly spreading out away from his wrist, wrapping around Crazy Horse together with her horse. Crazy Horse was stopped from running wild anymore.

"Sink hundred of ships, o the threat of sea lurking in the deep ocean! Surface, led by my singing voice… show that whole face! …Stab the fang! Ice Buster!!"

From the side, Koyuki was also chanting magic while rushing here. When she thrust both her hand to the tied Crazy Horse, from those two hands countless ice blocks were created one after another.

The few tons of ices that were created blew away Crazy Horse and squashed her.

"I got worried that nobody was going to come helping me you know."

When Kazuki said that, Hikarus-senpai laughed "Ahaha". "There is no way we will do that right—"

"For each time I save you, I demand one reward each." Koyuki's eyes shined bright.

The ice mountains that even now was continuously crushing Crazy Horse was evaporated into steam.

From inside the rubble of the building, the horse's fur was covering Crazy Horse's whole body. A steady flame was spouting out from the fur's ends. Until just now she didn't even wear her Magic Dress.

"Kazuki, mission complete…!"

In the meantime Kamimura-san raised her voice as if she was just clearing a game, when her eyes met Kazuki she thrust her thumb up. While Kamimura-san was covering with defensive magic, finally the North American knights completed their retreat to outside the dome.

"Thank you, Jonny." Kazuki also gave a thumb up.

Shouko that was giving out instructions all over also went "Fuhii—", even though the battle didn't go well she released a sigh.

With this they should be able to link up with the main force that was waiting for the enemy's main force at Colorado river.

Japan, North America, and the Indian's elites could clash with each other without holding back.

"Hayashizaki Kazuki, I'll leave the four Chiefs over there to you!" Clark called out to him in a loud voice.

During the time they were supporting their own respective comrades that they knew well, Kazuki and his group, Clark and her group, both groups were naturally beginning to crowd separately.

At the other side there were also three magicians visible who had come back to their original appearance from being a snake, most likely those of

Chief level returned to their original appearance after succeeding in infiltration so that they could display their power.

A woman wearing dog fur on her body that seemed likely to be a Chief was heading to his direction, trying to attack at this side.

“No one can escape from the law of the wasteland… Roping & Jitterbug(Dancer of Lasso)!”

But Jeremy caught her with a lasso and pulled her back.

If they went until that far… Kazuki nodded.

There were seven Chiefs. Dancing Snake, Standing Bear, Sitting Bull, Crazy Horse. His side was taking charge of four people, while the other side was taking on three people, there was unfairness.

However looking at the number of people, with Clark and the Numbers that totaled eight people, compared to Kazuki and his comrades that were tied by bonds, his group was near double the number of Clark’s group.

Furthermore if Clark’s power was consumed it would be hard to recover. Thinking about how to win against South America, Clark’s proposal was correct.

“Everyone, we are finishing this up quickly!!” Kazuki called out to his comrades.

Correct, quickly. If Clark’s group defeated the Chiefs faster than this side, would they then reinforce this side so honestly? They wouldn’t. Surely… they would aim at Kazuki’s back.

In reverse if this side finished up earlier, they could obtain the chance to aim at Clark’s back. This might be Clark implicitly proposing a race.

…This was a really strange battle. Measuring the time to betray the other party, in order to betray better, they need to fight the enemy in front of their eyes in a hurry…

The Chiefs were only four people, but several dozens of enlarged and berserk snakes that couldn’t be differentiated from each other were powerful with their mob-like tendency. The mechanized soldier of the North American Knight Order was also strong, but because these snakes originally were also Magika Stigma they were really strong. What made Kazuki anxious that none of his comrades would come to help was also because he sensed that his comrades were in hard battles.

Nonetheless, Arthur with [Carnwennan] in hand sped-up himself and took on almost ten snakes by himself. He would be happier if Arthur helped in dealing with the Chiefs instead, but surely Arthur was thinking to not make himself stand out too.

“First we are dispelling the snakes’ reinforcement magic!”

Dancing Snake turned the snakes, Sitting Bull enlarged them, Crazy Horse enraged them, if any of those three was not defeated then the situation wouldn’t change for the better.

“GUGAAAAAAAAAAAA!”

“BEARRRRRRRRRRRR!”

Standing Bear that was unrelated to the reinforcement magic was fought by Beatrix that seemed to be having fun wrestling one-on-one earnestly against the bear, so he would leave that to her… '…That girl, doesn't she seem to be awfully having fun fighting against someone other than me? What is this, this jealousy.'

"Eeei, it's troublesome getting slow in this kind of fight! Akane, let's go with the usual thing-☆"

"Right, Kanon."

Kanon-senpai and Akane-senpai earnestly ran around from the snakes, and then they hid behind Kohaku's back. Kohaku's figure that protected the two while carrying innumerable Sacred Treasures was completely like Musashibo Benkei. At a glance the two great senpai looked pathetic, but Kazuki also knew about their powerful and peerless combination. Even their chanting speed was fast.

In fact the time to release it had come.

"Here we go-☆ O the wounded angel waving the flag of rebellion… under the [worthless] name release the looked down silent fury! Emission Flare!!"

Besides Kanon-senpai, an avatar of a beautiful angel with blue flames swaying all over her body was floating. Kanon-senpai's contracted Diva, <Belial>.

That magic—[Emission Flare], excepting special magic like level 10 or Original One, was the most destructive magic Kazuki knew.

From the sky several streaks of blue flame was raining down. Light was overflowing from the place where they impacted one after another, spreading wide. The blue flame rivaled the stars in space.

That explosive heat ignored Kanon-senpai's control and tried to burn everything.

Akane-senpai invoked her magic simultaneously. Besides her was an eerie Diva with an owl face, <Amon>.

"All phenomenon of sky, that wing ride the rising wind… o god of wind, wash away the world foundation and rule in accordance of your thought! Rizomata Mastery!!"

Terrific winds rose inside the dome. When Akane-senpai moved her hand as if wielding a command baton, that wind was controlled following her thought, swallowing the enlarged blue flame. That wind put all five base elements under her rule, the wind of god. The wind drew a spiral and compressed the flame, forming a dot of light like a small star. That dot became a beam that was controlled by Akane-senpai's will.

It was the leyline of death that thoroughly stole the touched thing's defensive magic power.

"Crazy Horse Coming…!"

But at that time Crazy Horse reinvoked the magic that she had chanted earlier.

"Damn it!?"

In an instant, Kazuki guessed her intention just before it happened, but different with defending against normal attack magic with defense magic, he didn’t have any way of defending against that with the magic that he possessed.

The agitating wave was—washing over Akane-senpai.

“Eh…?” Akane-senpai made a face that was taken by surprise. That expression cracked and distorted.

“KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!” A scream that tore the throat.

Akane-senpai’s mind fell under the madness for only a moment.

But at that time the divine wind lost its control, making the vast energy overflow.

“Akane, what are you doing so irresponsibly! Even I cannot control that flame you know-☆”

Kanon-senpai yelled, though just who was it that was the most irresponsible.

Akane-senpai pressed her head while she just barely recovered her sanity, however,

“I’m sorry, everyone, use defensive magic…!!”

The blue light exploding out from the spiral of wind was enveloping everything—.

“Kazuki-!” Just before that happened, Kamimura-san was looking at Kazuki. Amaterasu who excelled in the power of protection. She was telling him to use that power together. Kazuki nodded.

“ “What floated in the air is the star of ruin that eclipse the sky, until the dawn breaks, please confine us at that motherly wall… Mikuni Shugo Kekkai□Ama no Iwato!” “ (TN: Country Protection Barrier□Gate of the Celestial Rock Cave)

In front of Kazuki and his comrades, countless lines of light ran, pure white wall was materialized in that uneven outline. Amaterasu’s shut-in space that Kazuki had also seen at Astrum, [Gate of the Celestial Rock Cave]’s defensive power was just like that reproduced as a barrier.

“I thought that something like this might happen.”

Kaguya-senpai too didn’t trust the third year seniors for even a little bit.

“Otouto-kun, I’m using it…!”

Kaguya-senpai stopped being unwilling to use the new power—that figure of hers changed into Chouki Magician, she invoked a new magic.

“Tear off the world and shut it in nothingness! Swallow all light, inside my womb… Vanta Black Hole(Perfect Light Absorbing Space)!!”

Black magic power spouted out from Kaguya-senpai’s whole body.

The black magic power with visible ray absorption rate that physically couldn’t exist was whirling and rotating, absorbing the blue light—it was a defensive magic that was particularly effective against an attack of light.

“O motherly nature… the now approaching calamity is also nature… we are also nature… if so then please harmonize everything and protect us…

Kurispel Tepee(Mystical Leather Hut)!” (TN: Don’t know about this one, the katakana is □□□□□□□□□)

The strongest chief Sitting Bull raised up both her hands. Then as if a thick curtain was falling down, thin, soft, undulating white leather was falling down. The white leather that was sewed with beautiful and mystical embroidery blocked that blue aurora.

The light saturated. All solid bodies were liquefied, all gas’ Prima Materia had their electrons collapse, turning into super high temperature plasma. The blue light that destroyed every material was overflowing, the vibration that sounded like death’s agony from the air that was made into plasma made a terrific roar reverberating around the area.

Even so, Akane-senpai that was barely coming back from her agitation tried to suppress the damage somehow, she rewrapped the light with the wind of [Rizomata Mastery] to force out the destruction outside the area of the main street where they were fighting, setting free the power to the sky.

The magic phenomenon met its demise. Cave, black hole, mystical leather, all was crumbling down, not a little damage was distributed to everyone.

“Kanon-senpai you idiot-!” Hikaru-senpai blamed with a half joking and half serious face.

“Just now can’t be helped right~…is everyone safe-☆”

With [Rizomata Mastery] the damage to Las Vegas was suppressed to some degree, but around them displaying a sight as if they were in an alternate world. The asphalt of the road and the building were gouged, the surface was melting into mud. Ten-odd Indians were collapsed inside the craters that were made here and there. Their transformation was undone due to the damage felling them into magic intoxication, they had returned into their original form. It seemed that if he was asked whether the result was a plus or a minus, the plus was a lot more.

“The wrestling… was just reaching the climax though.”

Beatrix and Standing Bear that grappled in contest of strength were also blown away from the shockwave, where now they were getting poised to start again.

“Kaguya-senpai…”

“Otouto-kun, let’s finish this immediately.”

Kaguya-senpai’s appearance was changing. Chouki Magician—the Magic Dress that covered Kaguya-senpai’s body was further reduced into mere patterns that hid her parts, the ornaments on her back was transfigured into wings that made one think of a succubus or an incubus.

“Kaguya-senpai… and then everyone too! Then please do it!”

With how he didn’t understand what kind of countermeasure Clark had prepared, he didn’t want to expose his power of Basileus more than this in this place where Clark was also present.

However they needed to win for even a second faster. There was a need to make full use of everyone’s power.

“Yosh, a short decisive battle!”

Hikaru-senpai also agreed, her body was wrapped in light. Golden light that made one think of star and lightning was scattered… Hikaru-senpai’s figure was also changed into Chouki Magician. As if expressing senpai’s refreshing disposition, her Magic Dress was a linear lines that formed V-shape digging into her body. Something like robe of feathers were growing out from her shoulders and back, showers of light and sparks were constantly scattered from there.

“E, even me is Chouki here!” “Puu.”

Both Mio and Koyuki also changed their appearance into the evolved form he had seen before.

The four people that were the first for Kazuki in the Witch’s Mansion, magnificently stepped forward together.

“Those four are the elites of your Mythology huh.”

Crazy Horse, Sitting Bull, Dancing Snake, Standing Bear… the glint in their eyes sharpened, they betted the pride of their own Mythology.

Kazuki distributed magic power to the four people. Kazuki’s newly obtained power—Japanese Mythology’s [Power of Harmony].

Harmony—Kazuki embraced a sensation as if he had become a single cluster of existence with his comrades. He perceived everyone’s magic power—where he was able to freely control them all.

Kazuki poured magic power into the four Chouki Magicians, concentrating them. He made them cable of more powerful magic and even faster invocation, in order to decide the battle.

“This is a match, Indian Mythology! Compared to the other country’s Mythology… I’ll prove that this me is a rank A even in international standards!!”

Mio shouted that vigorously—and invoked Phoenix’s level 9 magic.

“Repeating life and death o the undying bird of eternity… life born from ash(zero) the infinite fire seed right here! Super Nova(Origin Sun)!!”

A small fire spark was fired from Mio’s palm. Inside that really small fire spark, Phoenix’s everything that carried infinite life was compressed.

That fire spark flew aiming at Crazy Horse that was fighting Kazuki.

“…My true name is Ordo Lady Force. That power, I’ll show you how I meet it.”

The woman who introduced herself as Crazy Horse whispered that and demonstrated her magic power.

“O the great sun, please descend unto this body! We will continue to run until this body turns into ash! Until we arrive at the vision we see in the boundary of eternity, endlessly! Winwanyanku Wachipi(Utmost Limit Sun Festival)!!” (TN: I don’t get at all this Indian words, here is the katakana □□□□□□□□□□□□)

Crazy Horse yelled crazily “URARARARAAAAAAAA!”, flame was spouting out from her whole body, making her body into the very sun itself. The immortal bird’s flame of life that was compressed into a small fire spark, and the Indian soul that had been changed into the sun itself collided into each other.

“I’ll give you the eternal hibernation. O law(Boltzmann Distribution), roll over. Absorb unlimited energy, surpass the absolute and please shut the bitter enemy into negative. Negative Over Zero(Transcendental Cold Boundary)!”

Koyuki and the mermaid Vepar were breathing out breath of atom gas that possessed minus Kelvin temperature. That breath took away the heat from the space even until surpassing the absolute zero.

The true meaning of [minus temperature] was not the temperature falling until below zero. Snatching away temperature unlimitedly—opening the door to the world of unknown low temperature surpassing absolute zero—the [negative].

Koyuki brought about that world of absolute cold at the straight line space that was connected to Standing Bear.

“My name is Dick Fool!” Standing Bear released her transformation into bear, her appearance returned into a large woman around two meter tall and faced the attack.

“I’ll kill you if you are killable person! I am the aloof beast that go through circle of life and death endlessly! I’ll make even the god of death submit!! Lone Way(Endless Tear’s Journey)!!”

While being full to the brim with unlimited regenerative power in her whole body, Standing Bear rushed into the world of cold that surpassed the absolute.

“Snake-san, my bad but I have emotional attachment to lightning element. Kazuki said that yellow suited me! Thunder god in the right hand, wind god in the left hand! Lightning storm is not destruction, but blessing(Karis) and power(Baal)! Karis Yagrush(Wind Lightning Double Crushing)!!”

The hammer Yagrush was created in Hikaru-senpai’s right hand, and in her left hand was the spear Maimuur. When she met both her hands, the two weapons shone while turning into a single light. Inside the light, roar of thunder and storm was circulating as if it was the rage of god itself, rumbling inside senpai’s hand. Hikaru-senpai held it aloft in her right hand while rushing to Dancing Snake.

“My name is Masaesuva! The lightning will descend to the deeply sinful civilization and the poison fang will gouge its heart! The lightning is acting as agent of nature’s principle! Waunshirapsuni(Heaven Snake Mortality)!”

Dancing Snake’s right hand was bending back and forth in zigzag, becoming the lightning itself. That lightning met Hikaru-senpai in order to pierce her heart.

“Containing samsara’s perpetuity inside o the darkness of mind! O the seven star shining inside that! Expose the microcosmos of heaven, earth and creation and show the whereabouts of human!! Galaxy!”

Kaguya-senpai, with even faster chanting and more powerful magic power that could be felt, fired her own Original One to the strongest Chief Sitting Bull.

Sitting Bull who was sitting on the air and floating was thrown into the pure black void of space. Shining meteor and cosmic ray was attacking Sitting Bull.

“My name is Satanku. …O holy buffalo melting into Kaiowa’s blood… give rise to that calm microcosmos of wisdom. Tokupera Tsuwakaki(Infinite Harmony Cosmos)!”

White cosmos spread from the calm Sitting Bull. It swallowed even meteor and cosmic ray, painting the jet black world into white. Kaguya-senpai’s black that conceived the blinking of stars, and the white nothingness of the quiet White Buffalo fought each other.

Four magic and four magic clashed, turning into four flashes. The snakes that even now were continuing to rampage, Kazuki and co., all of them had their movements paralyzed from the magic power wave that made them doubt their eyes.

Kazuki continued to pour magic power into the four people with the Power of Harmony while holding his breath watching the four lights. The lights didn’t cease to exist no matter how long.

“…In the first place, we are just disposable pawns…”

From inside the light, Crazy Horse was uttering out a philosophical voice. Disposable pawn… what did she mean? Kazuki sharpened his ears.

“But… this is the best day to die. Today too, compared to any kind of day.”

“Right, the day we became Indian we had already died.”

“Wishing for the harmony of all, we throw away ourselves.”

“Then this fate too, has no difference with anything and everything else.”

The lights ceased.

“They did it…? No, the Indians are… not here?”

There was nothing. If their side had won after this tough contest then the four people who should be collapsing in magic intoxication, were not here. From that space where there was nothing, voices and magic power welled up without any previous sign.

“ “ “ “From the beginning we are one body that become everything! We return to nature a step ahead!!” “ “ “

Blue magic power was—distorted, wriggled, materializing into complicated shapes like the moment where Demon Beasts were born and dropped from Cancer(Evil Nature World Alternate). That thing was manifested with great size like Las Vegas’ mega hotel, to the degree that they needed to look up to see it.

What appeared was possessing four heads of horse, bear, ox, and snake, its body was also an irregular fusion of each animal, a complicated and bizarre chimera.

What flashed inside Kazuki’s head immediately was the transformation of the Takasugi brothers into Yamata no Orochi.

"They threw their selves…!? They are integrating into Mythology!"

The four heads of the beast opened their mouths, four scream were mixing together making a dissonant sound resound.

The magicians of the Indians that collapsed around the area were pulled by unseen hands, they were dragged into the chimera trailingly.

The one who immediately had an unpleasant premonition rushing into their head was not just Kazuki. Indian Mythology converted death into power. But, he couldn't believe that humans who were still alive were forcefully…?

"Wait, isn't that too gross don't you think!?"

Mio was unable to just watch and rushed at one of the dragged Indians. There was not even time to stop her because it was dangerous. Without even time to chant one of the chimera's head—from the mouth of the horse, a fireball that gave off the impression of a powerful Summoning Magic was spat out. Being fired at with that while she was defenseless from just finishing a grand magic, Mio was blown away while raising a scream "KYAA-!"

With that as the beginning, all the other heads also—from the mouth of the snake was poison, then countless bone bullets from the ox's mouth, scattering to the surroundings. Further two bear arms from its body were stretching out, destroying the surroundings all over.

"Burn to ash everything of the touching person… the scorching heat of denial without any place to go! Self Burning!!"

"O rejection of absolute zero, become the armor of isolation that protects my body! Freeze Barrier!!"

"O stream of atmosphere, converge on this body, become the storm that rejects the bitter enemy! The eye of the typhoon is my throne! Storm Fort!"

In panic Kazuki and the others invoked defensive magic. The chimera's tyrannical and peerless attack didn't question whether one was ally or enemy, even the snakes that were still fighting were dragged into it, those snakes were going to be swallowed.

Whether it was flame, electricity, or bone bullet, the chimera didn't know to stop, as if it wouldn't end until it vomited out all of its energy. It made Kazuki recall the time against a materialized Diva—like Hel that didn't chant to repeatedly invoke magic phenomenon, Kazuki and group were forced into a one-sided defensive battle.

They didn't have any leeway to attack back.

"Kazuki!" Kamimura-san who was desperately chanting defensive magic abandoned what she was doing and dashed to Kazuki. Even while getting struck by flying flames from the side and staggered, she tightly held at Kazuki's arm.

"I… hate that! That's unpleasant, I want to defeat it!!" She said in appeal desperately.

Just like what she said in the ferris wheel, that was the most [disagreeable human way of living] for Kamimura-san.

"…That's right isn't it, let's defeat it quickly."

The people who got swallowed forcefully shouldn't have been integrated into it completely yet. By any chance the four Chiefs were also the same. If they defeat it in a hurry, perhaps they could be released.

As if protecting Kazuki and Kamimura-san's conversation, Kohaku cut between the two of them and the chimera. "Block and endure, <Taroudachi>! Battou Kaikon—Taiju no Shinogi!" (TN: Big Tree's Ridge)

When Kohaku poured magic power into the oodachi Sacred Treasure she held in her hand, the oodachi was enlarged ten-odd times bigger before she stabbed it into the ground with a loud voice *DON*, making a shield for herself, Kazuki and Kamimura-san.

Kazuki guessed Kamimura-san's intention, he hugged that small statured body close.

"Ri, right now, it's not just because for wanting power, that… all this time… I wanted to kiss so… be, because I love you so… that………please kiss me."

Averting her eyes from Kazuki, fidgeting around, Kamimura-san's voice gradually became smaller.

Kazuki softly raised her thin jaw, and kissed that small lovely lips that looked like sakura petals. Kamimura-san too, now that their lips touched she suddenly sucked at him proactively. The circuit of magic power between the two was expanded widely and strongly, through there magic power that possessed will—the power of the chief god of Japanese Mythology Amaterasu was flowing into him. Information body that should be called the blueprint to cause the magic phenomenon to materialize a Diva filled Kazuki's head.

Besides them, Amaterasu was materializing. With large pongee as her outer garment and an ancient skirt widening from her waist, she was a little girl that possessed the majesty of the ancient times—it was by no means her jersey figure or her American leather jacket figure.

"Yoosh, then let's do this seriously in my work mode 'kay, Kazuki."

Amaterasu unusually raised a tense voice.

But, Kamimura-san didn't seem as if she was going to release Kazuki and became even more immersed in the kiss.

…Eh, it's a little…?

"Nn-…nn-" While leaking out the breathing of someone doing her all, Kamimura-san slid her slippery tongue inside Kazuki's mouth.

Kazuki also responded to that and entangled his tongue stickily to hers. No, this was not the time to do this so passionately though…

"Hei hei hee—ii, what are you two doing? How long you are going to do this? Amaterasu-san here is already materialized you know—?" *BUNBUN* Amaterasu was pretending she was swinging a bat like a practice-swinging.

"Ka, Kazuki, feels like you are taking a little long there… uwaa-" Kohaku who was supporting her giant oodachi and desperately enduring the attack was looking back at his way before her face reddened with a puff from witnessing the passionate kiss.

"Nn~♡ nn~♡"

Finally Kohaku's Taroudachi couldn't endure the shockwave and returned to its original size, Kohaku was then completely hit by a fireball and raised a scream "UGYAA—!"

Kazuki and also Kamimura-san were intoxicated and drunk in the kiss, but they released their lips in panic with a wet sound.

"Jonny, this place is a battlefield."

"Ah… so, sosososo sorry!"

Kazuki stroked Kamimura-san's head while facing the chaotic chimera. Kamimura-san couldn't accept something like this. And he completely agreed.

"…Once Minakanushi(world) was tallow that looked like jellyfish, having no form and doing nothing but keep swaying. What is manifested in my hand is the power of Musubi. The three gods of beginning exposed the yin and yang of Izanagi and Izanami in the capacity of the power of <decomposing> and <stirring>… once more I(Amaterasu) act as the agent of that power."

"Yoossh King Solomon, let's ascend to the sky together."

Amaterasu circled behind Kazuki and embraced Kazuki's waist up tightly while *pyon* jumping. Each time Amaterasu jumped, rainbow was spanned under her feet, with that as foothold Amaterasu *pyon pyon* keep jumping high to the sky like a rabbit that was ascending to the moon.

Reaching the height where the chimera looked like a mere speck, Amaterasu stopped her jump and braced her legs firmly. Kazuki also got down there. A bridge of rainbow—that was Japanese Mythology's first stage. Countless rainbows were gathering at Kazuki's both hands, turning into a single pillar.

"Now Kazuki, stab that thing to that chaos and make it koorokoro!"

Amaterasu urged him like that. Kazuki followed what he was told and—

"Recapitulate the world creation principle right here… pierce the chaos of the surface from Ame no Ukihashi(Heaven Floating Bridge)! Ame no Nuboko(Heaven Swamp Spear)!!"

Kazuki directed the pillar of light to the earth and thrust. That action transcended the concept of aiming or evading—the light pierced the person who was not recognized by Japanese Mythology's chief god and Basileus. The chimera who was wielding atrocity at the surface was turned into a skewer—looking down from this height, the chimera looked like an insect specimen in lab. The beast's insane roar could even be heard from where he was.

Kazuki stirred. When he shook the pillar of light [Ame no Nuboko], along with a strange response at his hand *koorokoro*, the chimera's Prima Materia was decomposing. What he did quietly, mercilessly, ruined its existence.

"What's with the koorokoro you said?"

"Don't know." Amaterasu nonchalantly laughed. "Even I don't get Yasomaro's language sense." (TN: Don't know about this Yasomaro thing.

It’s a person’s name, but there is multiple one when I google it and I don’t know which one was referenced.)

When he further *koorokoro* stirred at the Prima Materia of the decomposing chimera, it was forming a different shape than Onogoro—reconstructing the four Chiefs and the magicians that were swallowed by the chimera. All of them were in magic intoxication but they seemed safe.

With the power of the beginning, an end had been brought for this battle.

Suddenly Kazuki looked down at the one more battlefield that was separate from his side’s location. At that place, the spark of magic power had already been calming down. He couldn’t worry about that side with the menace of the chimera bearing down on his side, but it seemed that the other side had also dealt with the three Chiefs and the snakes safely.

…Was the battles ended at the same time?

Or else, was it that the other side didn’t think of launching a surprise attack?

Ame no Nuboko that had finished its role disappeared. “Good bye desu nyan” Amaterasu’s materialization was also thinning. Kazuki jumped down from the disappearing rainbow bridge and returned to the ground.

Thanks to the chimera rampaging, the surrounding several dozen meters looked completely like an empty lot.

“I saw it. To not just kill that thing(chimera) but returning them beautifully back to normal is quite a considerable skill. I knew it but looks like you are not just all talk.”

Clark turned up while dragging behind her three Chiefs trailingly. The three Chiefs that were wearing Indian costumes seemed like they were in magic intoxication, their bodies didn’t even twitch.

The Numbers were also following along behind.

“This one is Crow Dog that commands Coyote spirit. And the other two are… what is it?”

“Is this the time to talk so leisurely?”

Kazuki interrupted and asked. If they were not going to pick a fight here then…

“I think we should immediately go right now to join the clash of the main forces at Colorado river.”

“Guess so huh…”

Hearing Kazuki’s pointing that out, Clark was slowly looking up at the direction of Colorado’s vicinity. Of course although the dome had been broken, they shouldn’t be able to see the battlefield from here, but…

At that time the bodies of the two collapsed Chiefs were getting up all of a sudden.

Those two bodies instantly put up Enchant Aura all over their body and accelerated, one tackled Kazuki’s waist, and the other one circled behind Kazuki with faster speed, pinioning Kazuki from behind. Just in an instant—Kazuki’s movement was sealed.

Bewilderment. He was desperately trying to work his frozen mind. Why? The Chiefs that he thought to be defeated were as if they were following Clark's conspiracy.

Why were the Chiefs doing this? …These two were…

[Two people]

Clark opened her mouth.

"My bad, Indian's Chiefs are not seven people but just five. I lied. All of us ganged up on Crow Dog alone and defeated her, then next we just pretended to fight."

His thought was—once more felt like it was going to stop. Is that so? He overlooked that.

He had to confirm. No, how could he imagine that they would do something like this.

These two were…

Muddily, the figure of the two Indians melted. Their appearance distorted, turning into completely different people.

The one who clung at Kazuki's lower body was Ginny. And the one that agilely took Kazuki's back and was pinioning him right now, was Mary.

Ginny's curious contracted Diva, <Pop Star>.

She could use transformation magic. Kazuki had witnessed that once.

He was betrayed. …No.

One of the Numbers standing by behind Clark, Jeremy Barret was directing killing intent to Kazuki and at the same time she generated magic power.

Short chant. There was no human that could immediately obstruct her.

"Self Burning!"

What Kazuki could do, was just chanting defensive magic instantaneously through Phoenix that was residing inside Zekorbeni.

"What is loaded into the magazine is a weakling's black soul. Dyed in grief, worn out by tear, disgraced by scream, even so not giving up to keep loving the world—my jet black is also a color."

Jeremy chanted a spell. It felt awfully slow. The avatar of the abstract Diva <Frontier Spirit> was floating at her back. It was a glitteringly slimy black flame.

Weakling. Poor person. Pathetic person. Seedy person. Lowly person. Worldly person. Vulgar person. Filthy person.

Ugly person. Menial person. Malicious person. Unfair person. Coarse person. Vain person. Unrestrained person. Discriminative person. Cursing person.

A black color that shared all of that, was burning with the willpower that didn't care of choosing the method.

It was as if the ideology of Clark Moore was materialized, a black flame filled full with ambition.

It was the very woman called Clark Moore itself.

Jeremy who was a believer like a puppet, loaded that into her bullet.

“That light, I received it! …Giant Killing!!”

Jeremy fired the revolver. That pitch black bullet slipped through the flame armor like a ghost, and hit Kazuki’s chest. An unknown impact attacked Kazuki.
At that moment, with a snap Kazuki felt how he became unable to sense his important [connection with everyone] that he had constantly continued to feel in these several months.
This attack, took away what made a strong person into a strong person.

He understood—the King Solomon power was sealed.

Chapter 4 – Mythology Abasement

Part 1

Wind was blowing from the broken dome, passing through between Kazuki and Clark.

Due to the damaged dome, whether it was the projected fake sky or the real sky that could be peeked from the hole in the dome, both were changing color into the dark blue of the evening sky. For a while nobody was saying anything.

After a silence, Ginny and Mary's bodies were blown away. Arthur and Beatrix quickly rushed to Kazuki holding their respective weapons.

Ginny and Mary were blown away several meters away without any resistance like dolls that didn't have any strength in its limbs, they collapsed and didn't move anymore. They were silent without any sign of will.

Arthur looked at Kazuki from the corner of his eyes and asked "What is it they did to you?"

"My power is sealed."

"Only from one attack just now? Don't tell me…" Arthur lost his words.

To think that the power of Basileus was sealed just with one attack, certainly it was unbelievable. One attack that took away the country's greatest battle strength. A single attack that overthrown a country. There was no doubt that it was an Original One that made the possessor of the attribute and the Diva shoulder a really great risk.

Risk—in actuality, that kind of bullet wouldn't hit Kazuki without some kind of really ingenious plan.

And then almost all of the magic power wavelength of Jeremy who had finished firing the bullet was completely disappearing.

Surely that girl was betting her everything inside that single attack.

"Jeremy, fall back, you can never fight again right?"

Clark cared for Jeremy like that. Hearing the word never, that word reverberated inside their ears.

Kazuki opened a distance and directed his gaze at the collapsed Ginny and Mary.

"What did you do to those two?" A slight fury colored his tone.

"So you don't think that they just normally betrayed you huh. …But that's correct. Both of them are controlled by drug and electrode. After all I thought that they might betray me."

Machining human body. America had that kind of technology. Even the wavelength of their magic power felt different.

“They might become cripple from the after-effect. But it can’t be helped, they are sacrifices.”

A tone so cold like steel in midwinter made fun of Kazuki.

Fury welled up even more inside his chest. This woman wouldn’t hesitate to sacrifice anything.

“Lotte, Miyabi-senpai, please look at these two. Help them somehow.”

Miyabi-senpai and Lotte who excelled in mind magic rushed to Mary and Ginny in panic.

But apart from his rage, his head was calm. Kazuki asked with a calm tone.

“You shouldn’t understand how the Indians would move. Thinking about that, isn’t this method leaving too much to luck?”

She made him misrecognized the number of the Chiefs. She brainwashed the two people that earned Kazuki’s trust, changed their body, and made them pretend as the Chiefs. But to have all those tricks go so well on the battlefield, most of them was only thanks to luck and ad-lib performance. He couldn’t think of the plan as skillful. No, it couldn’t even be called a plan. This was—.

“Of course it was a gamble. The battle of the weakling is always a match of betting all your human resource to come out on top. I came this far from winning all those bets. From now on too I have to win them all… to protect America’s dignity.”

That resolve cornered Kazuki until this far. *Step*…Clark walked closer to Kazuki.

Kazuki quietly stared at Clark. Arthur and Beatrix readied their weapon.

“Right now the battle should be continuing at Colorado river, but you are planning to fight us here?”

“We are also in an overwhelming advantage at the fight of Colorado river. The report just came from the radio just now. My bad, but I don’t have any more use of you. Medicine Wheel… will be defeated by me.”

Clark was talking with a smooth tone that everything was going exactly as she planned.

“Well, that’s fine. This situation is also desirable for me.”

Kazuki withdrew a beam of light from his waist, Ame no Murakumo was once again pulled out from its sheath. Looking at that, Clark’s eyebrow shook. It was only a little movement from her expression, but it was a sign of shock he never saw until now.

“That’s the Sacred Treasure a Basileus have…? Even though your Basileus power is sealed… you can use it?”

The Excalibur that Arthur possessed, couldn’t be used by anybody other than Arthur.

The Sacred Treasure that a Basileus possessed, was a symbolic item of such.

Even for Kazuki, he was recognized as the Basileus of the Japanese Mythology by obtaining the three Sacred Treasures.

But there was no such symbolic weapon in the Solomon Mythology because they were only a pure sorcery Mythology.

Clark was making a mistake.

“What you sealed—is only the power of Solomon Mythology’s Basileus!”

Clark didn’t know at all, that Kazuki was a Basileus of two Mythologies.

Kazuki stepped solidly on the asphalt surface. “What!?” Clark spouted out her agitation.

Kazuki directed the tip of Ame no Murakumo at Clark and thrust while pouring magic power.

Right now Kazuki couldn’t use Amaterasu’s magic. He lost the circuit of positivity level with Kamimura-san and became unable to obtain her contracted Diva.

But the Japanese Mythology had already subordinated themselves to Kazuki. The Sacred Treasures had also recognized him as their user. Ame no Murakumo remembered—the fight between Kazuki and Susanoo.

Ame no Murakumo emitted heat inside Kazuki’s palm, it beat with pulsation. At this time Kazuki felt for the first time affection that he had never felt before towards Ame no Murakumo. Perhaps it could be even compared with the feeling that he held for his lost <Doufuu> that he held somewhere in his heart until now.

Clark’s left arm shined. Magic power burst out from there, materializing a pentagon steel.

“O the protection that supported my justice, take form right here. Vibra Pentagon(National Defense Shield)!”

A star was drawn at the center, around it was a two layer frame of red and white enclosing it, it was a shield with a design like the US flag. The solid shield that emitted cold tried to block Kazuki’s straightforward thrust.

“Distort, Ame no Murakumo! Battou Kaikon—Kushihebi no Tachi!!” (TN: Long sword of skewered snake)

As if to answer Kazuki’s affection, Ame no Murakumo vibrated. It insisted to use the power, use it, use it. The sword blade where Kazuki poured his magic power was *guneri!* stretching out and twisting in long range, it circumvented the shield.

Kushihebi no Tachi—Ame no Murakumo was a sword that appeared from the inside of the severed tail of Yamata no Orochi. Therefore there was also a legend that it was a sword that carried the power of snake. Ame no Murakumo that circumvented the shield stabbed at Clark right from her side.

Clark staggered while scattering the blue light of smashed magic. She directed an expression like steel at Kazuki.

“You cheated me a lot huh, brat!”

“It’s your own misunderstanding right? Be aware that your are walking on top of thin ice, Clark! It’s the end if your reading is mistaken!!”

Most likely Kazuki had been read by Clark for about 90%. But what gave birth to Clark's miscalculation was the result of her judgment using theory if Kazuki couldn't rely on the power of King Solomon.

{Kazuki…!} An urgent voice reverberated inside Kazuki's brain.

{Use the Power of Harmony at Itsuki-chan…!! Quick!!"

It was Amaterasu's voice. Kazuki turned back at Kamimura-san wondering what made her so impatient.

"Sayonara~. sayonara~, fuo~eba~"

Kamimura-san's figure looked faintly transparent, she was waving both her hands with a tranquil expression.

Kazuki lost his composure ten times greater than when he lost the power of Basileus.

"Wa, wait wait wait a second!! What are you doing trying to enter heaven like that!?"

{Kazuki, pull her through with the Power of Harmony-!!} Amaterasu's yelling voice was conveyed to him.

Is that so… Kamimura-san was supplied with magic power from the circuit of King Solomon's positivity level, with that her flesh was preserved. But right now that circuit was cut off completely, making Kamimura-san's power supply of life just Amaterasu. It was insufficient with only that.

Kazuki followed Amaterasu's advice and used the [Power of Harmony].

Kamimura-san's drying up flesh sucked up magic power like a dry land given water.

Kamimura-san barely recovered her body, but her feeling of substance was shaky.

If she got hit by attack magic and her magic power was shaved down, she might rise to heaven.

"Kamimura-san fall back until a safe place!!"

When Kazuki seriously yelled that in worry, Kamimura-san withdrew while saying "A, aii—".

And then there was no enemy that would purposefully wait for such a conversation to take place peacefully.

"O light that break evil, dwell in my hand and become a flash!"

Magic power was approaching from behind—she was coming to strike him. Even without looking Kazuki could feel that.

"Justice Knuckle(Fist of Judgement)!!"

Kazuki blocked that strike while turning back.

Clark's appearance was changing into her Magic Dress.

That steel-like expressionless face was covered by a streamlined helmet. It was shaped with a design of America's symbolic bird, the eagle. On her back was a flapping mantel, with distinctive color as a Magic Dress, her whole body was covered by a metallic suit. Holding <Vibra Pentagon> at her left arm, she struck at him with her right arm. That appearance was exactly a hero that embodied American Justice.

Clark's contracted Diva, <Super One>!

At the same time the Numbers were also descending down in attack, they were met by Kazuki's comrades.

"Unfortunately my reading missed! …You can only face me from the front!"

Fist and blade clashed, a resolute voice came from behind the approaching helmet.

"What the hell the person who just now aimed for the back is saying right now!"

"…Kuku-" A slight chuckle could be heard from the inside of the helmet, Kazuki doubted his ears.

Was she laughing, this woman? Even in front of a pure head-on fight…?

"You guys! I'll beat this guy(the Basileus)! Hold out until I finish!!"

"Everyone! I'll beat this guy(the King)! I'll wait until you all take care of those guys!!"

Saying those words for the first time, Kazuki felt a special meaning from that.

This was… his first [battle against a Basileus]. It was different with the time when he wagered the seat of Basileus with Ikousai. They were carrying the Mythology on their backs. They were carrying their own ideals on their backs. This was not a simple contest of strength or killing each other.

What came from the weight of what they shouldered was not nervousness, it was exaltation. Kazuki felt he understood the meaning of Clark's laugh.

Even this Clark could feel like that in this situation.

"Kushihebi no Tachi!"

Ame no Murakumo flexibly transformed while blocking the fist. The edge of the rippling blade was circling while attacking Clark. Clark agilely reacted and grabbed at the blade with her right hand.

The eye-visor of Clark's helmet shined glaringly at that instant.

Clark was striking at him with the Vibra Shield at her left arm. Kazuki separated his right hand from Ame no Murakumo that he held with two hand and blocked that shield with his hand. Just like that their strength was balanced.

"O light of freedom, illuminate the darkness, show the justice! Justice Blast(Beam of Judgement)!!"

Clark's eye-visor at her helmet let out strong red-hot light.

From there a straight beam was shot with a *ZAP!*

Although Kazuki had Foresighted it, he couldn't evade with his posture still in a lock with Clark. Kazuki immediately released his left hand that was holding Ame no Murakumo and averted his body using his right hand that was grasping at the shield as fulcrum.

"You let go of your weapon!?"

No—Ame no Murakumo undulated like a snake and automatically twined around Kazuki's hand.

However the aim was to break Kazuki's posture, Clark's right hand—the <Justice Knuckle> was held aloft. <Yasakani no Magatama> at Kazuki's left hand pulsated—[Use me, use my power] it was as if it was saying that.

…Because the power of King Solomon was sealed, the three Sacred Treasures were self-asserting themselves in a way they had never done before.

By any chance these guys, they might be actually feeling really jealous.

"Shut and seal, <Yasakani no Magatama>! Kaicho Kaikon—Hachimon Shibari!!"

With a snap the string of magatama enlarged and enfolded out From Kazuki's left wrist, tightening at Clark's body in many layers.

But just before Clark's whole body was tied, she shifted her own body and made only her lower body escape from the binding. She stepped strongly on the ground with her free right foot, and swung her left foot powerfully…!

"O Stars and Stripes, please inspire the hero's dancing movement… Dynamite Kick(Glory's Explosive Foot)!!"

- ZUBAAAAAAAAAN!* Kazuki received a terrific impact at his flank.

He bled off its power by jumping back behind just before it hit, but even so… it was heavy.

It was a power that made him question if his defensive magic power might explode if he ate that kick fully.

"Being a hero the instant you put on your helmet, are you really that kind of character huh, Clark Moore!"

"I am America's justice! There is not a single speck of shadow in my pride!!"

"Throwing away your human heart, using inhuman methods, you can still say that that's justice!?"

Kazuki attacked verbally what he wanted to say all this time but couldn't say because of his cooperative position with America.

"I can say it! This country knows… that power is justice! In the first place this America never cares of its method!!"

Once, in the old ear, America as the strongest country in the world was a country that acted as the agent of order and justice. If such a country was overturned and lost its power… perhaps it was only something natural for the people of the country that had thinking like Clark to appear. When they were once a strong country, they implicitly said to the weak [if you have any complaint then try to be like this], and so maybe now that they were weaklings themselves they didn't make a single complaint, they didn't even beg for help, only dignifiedly trying to do something about it themselves. Power was exactly justice—both when they were strong and also when they were weak, America continued to consistently persist in that proudly.

Clark was going to pursue Kazuki who was blown away by the kick. With her upper body still tied by the magatama, Clark emitted light from her helmet once more.

"Justice Blast!"

Kazuki performed ukemi on the ground while—with his body moving half by itself, he held up Yata no Kagami at the light. It could be said that the mirror was moving Kazuki's body as it pleased itself.

"Become the light that doesn't recognize that, <Yata no Kagami>! Fuukyou Kaikon—Tsukuyomi no Kagami!" (TN: Seal Mirror Soul Release—Tsukuyomi's Mirror)

The moon read—the direction of the light. And then it freely controlled that. It was the power of <Tsukuyomi>. Yata no Kagami was a worshipped object of Amaterasu, but each of the three Sacred Treasures was conceiving the power of each of the three honored gods.

Yata no Kagami disassembled the vector of the powerful heat beam and reflected the energy as it was to Clark. "Fuh!" However Clark powerfully opened both her arms and tore off the binding of the magatama, and then she scattered the light using Vibra Pentagon on her left arm.

The magatama shrank back to its previous form because the magic power that Kazuki poured into it had been destroyed, before it twined itself around Kazuki's left wrist once more. Both of them glared at each other while fixing back their stance.

Strong. Of course his power of Solomon was also sealed but… however she unexpectedly didn't have any bad habit with fortitude and vigorous strength, her way of fighting that picked at the opponent's weak point with numerous magic worked really well. And most important of all, compared to all the enemies he had faced until now… her mind was strong.

Even without any of her scheming, Clark's most special characteristic was surely her [unshakeableness].

"I am justice." With her silver suit and her flapping mantel, she said that once again.

Aah, perhaps you didn't need to be ashamed for anything. However…

"That justice of yours, I'll deny it with my justice!!"

Kazuki didn't retreat for even a single step and talked back strongly.

—The Basileus of Japanese Mythology must constantly possess a wide field of vision no matter what.

In order to use the Power of Harmony to the whole battlefield.

In a slight distance away from the one-on-one fight between Kazuki and Clark, the remaining five Numbers and Kazuki's comrades were also confronting each other. There was a large difference between their numbers, but even though the other side was almost completely uninjured, all of Kazuki's comrades were burdened with quite an exhaustion.

Using the Power of Harmony, Kazuki distributed magic power to six people of Kanae, Beatrix, Mio, Koyuki, Kaguya-senpai, and Hikaru-senpai. With this, those six people's magic power were completely recovered and even boosted past that.

They couldn't use the telepathic communication, but Mio intuitively understood Kazuki's feeling.

"Right now, let's fight with the people that were distributed with magic power by Kazuki!"

Six people—if the number of people was too much then each one’s magic power would become smaller, increasing the danger of being hit by a powerful attack in the worst chance. But it was also important to win in the number of moves against an opponent with a large number of people.

Japan VS America—even while Kazuki was concentrating at Clark, he determined the starting members with the Power of Harmony.

…Kazuki himself, still had yet to use the Power of Harmony on himself.

Part 2

"King said to hold out, but she won't mind even if we defeat them all right?"

"Calm down, Thomas. There is the Basileus of Britain at the other side see. Never forget of self-awareness that we are a young Mythology."

"But Adylle. Isn't that Britain Basileus drawing back to the rear? …Also it seems like for some reason the Japanese are also giving us just six opponents. I wonder if they are underestimating us?"

"That's why calm down, Thomas. I felt their magic powers are moving largely. Their magic power is concentrated on those six with some kind of method. I'm not feeling it at all that Japan is cutting corners here."

The five Numbers had already transformed into their Magic Dresses. Those were strange dresses from looking at them. Before the battle, those five were unanimously introducing themselves saying "It's a rare chance that we are normally facing each other like this."

"My name is Thomas Hanks. The third Numbers that is contracted with the embodiment of [Hollywood movies], <Enjoy & Exciting(Wild Enthusiasm)>. I'm going to crush all you Japanese except Mister Kurosawa."

She was a gorgeous woman with sunglasses and a fur coat put on her shoulder. Her attire looked like a simple celebrity clothing at a glance, but golden lights were emitted from here and there on her outfit.

"My name is Adylle Anderson. Symbolizing [contract] and [lawsuit]… I am contracted with <Black & White(Justice Scales)>. The Number 4. I'll judge your right and wrong."

She was a small statured girl with bob hair and a monocle. Putting on a mantel with extreme border design of white and black, her lower body was like underwear figure and on her back was an avatar of scale floating.

"I am Madonna Vicmanish! The magician of Diva <Queen Bee(Queen of Light)> of [cheer spirit]! My number is 7! I'm rooting at everyone and make them shine!"

The woman with amazingly sensual lips and body figure was shaking her butt in her cheerleader-style Magic Dress while talking. Her butt was a splendid butt that would make one go 'ooo-' even if it was the same sex that was seeing it.

"This one is Domingo Clemens. Numbers 8 that art contracted with the Diva that symbolized [baseball], <Make Drama(Dramatic Victory)>. This one art thinking to work hard at this Japan-America baseball."

Regardless that she was a woman, her hair was shaved in crew cut, showing her solid head. She was wearing a Magic Dress that had no way to be described other than a baseball uniform as it was.

"…Ridley Spillback. Diva of [space development] <NASA(Visitor)>… the last number 9."

Was it the influence of Ridley's Magic Dress, but her skin had a blue discoloration, her look that was wearing a silver suit was the typical alien of the fiction world.

Number 1 Red, Number 2 Jeremy, Number 5 Mary, Number 6 Ginny, those four were missing, but their majestic appearance… no, their eccentric appearance made Mio shudder.

"So this is American Justice's Numbers! How should I say it… it feels like the large gathering of variety shows isn't it? As expected from the country of freedom… it's just too free. Moreover, somehow, many of you are not moe…"

American Justice Mythology was not a mythology that had been talked in a long history. The symbolic spirituality of the modern American culture was made into Divas as a mass of magic power.

However it seemed that there was almost no personality in the Divas.

"Kana-chan and Beatrix are the vanguards, me and Hikaru are the mid-range. Mio-chan and Koyuki-chan will support from the rearguard. I think Otouto-kun chose us with that kind of intention."

Kaguya-senpai quickly gave instructions.

"…Kaguya-senpai, I think if it's the current me then I can chant the level 10."

Koyuki pulled at Kaguya-senpai's Magic Dress and said that.

Mio who was standing right beside her went "Eeehh-!?" and directed eyes filled with shock and doubt at Koyuki. Kaguya-senpai also opened her eyes wide and made a face that searched for Koyuki's true feeling staringly, but she immediately *pon* clapped her hand in understanding.

"Is that so, in the first place Koyuki-chan is an elf that has a lot of magic power after all…! Perhaps the Power of Harmony also influences the original size of the vessel."

"Perhaps Kazuki also planned for that, that he poured a lot of magic power into me."

Mio kicked and struggled saying "Favoritism is unfair~ unfair~", but Koyuki decided to ignore her.

"We should end this in a brief battle with a single powerful strike without getting damage as much as possible. If we can win with spare strength left, Kazuki can use that for himself with the Power of Harmony. Our magic power is already not just ours anymore."

Mio who was protesting unreasonably pondered with a serious face then she soon nodded from hearing Koyuki.

Japanese Mythology too was by no means a strong Mythology. The way of fighting of Japanese Mythology was exactly to economize their use of power.

"In other words it's all fine if I disturb those bunch without getting damage. That's exactly my specialty."

A muddy black magic power was coiling about at the katana <Michikage> in Kanae's hand. What possessed the black blade turning it into a Sacred Treasure was—the Demon King of rage, <Beleth>.

"Applaud my secret sword, Kuroneko Michikage! Battou Kaikon—<Kokui Musou>!!" (TN: Peerless Black Cloth)

Beleth and Kanae's souls hailed each other, the black magic power emitted from Michikage became a <Sacred Treasure Dress> that resembled a Magic Dress. That Dress would burst up Kanae's power the more her movements reached closer to her quintessence.

"I don't get the difficult things but… anyway it's fine if I just rampage! Those bunch's appearance are completely unclear but, I'm looking forward to what kind of attack they are going to use!!"

Beatrix was happily preparing her two-handed sword.

"Looks like your discussion is over already! Let's go!!"

Thomas proclaimed that and began her spell chanting—"Slow-!!"

The moment she reached the end of her incantation, the black cat was already in front of her eyes.

"…Eh?" Thomas who looked at that unknown speed had a diagonal line of light running through her body.

Hayashizaki-style Dream Sword the second—<Shin'iki>. The slash that was launched with a perfect movement shook the magic power of the person chanting a spell. It granted impact at the most vital pillar that configured the magic phenomenon, destroying it completely.

Beleth gave his blessing to that perfect technique, boosting its destructive power.

While Thomas was blown away, the sensation of her spell dispersed into nothing made her raise a scream.

"The, the spell is… broken!"

"Fa, fast-…!?" Toward Adylle that opened wide her eyes at the side,

"Nyaaaaaaa!" Kanae immediately slashed with her returning blade. The second attack was a little rough and it didn't reach Shin'iki, but "Guh-!" it was enough to scare Adylle.

"I see… with the magic power allocated from Nii-sama, my body is lighter than usual. My Enchant Aura is becoming sharper. It has benefits even for swordsman like me."

With the speed and power that were more than usual, Kanae felt just a little heartrending numbness. Kanae felt numb from this easy power-up precisely because of her habitual severe training that she kept repeating, yet she was also feeling moved.

"You art fast, but it's a speed that this one can hit!"

The baseball uniform woman, Domingo approached Kanae while her hand grasped a golden light.

“The one hit of victory for the sake of the sick little girl right here… Golden Bat(The Promised Home Run Until Outside the Stadium)!!”

A sharp horizontal swing attacked Kanae. Kanae had already Foresighted it and took a back-step.

But it didn’t end with that. The bat that was hitting empty air deviated from its original trajectory, ignoring physical phenomenon like the law of inertia the bat pursued Kanae. That action rather than saying it was Domingo that was swinging the bat, it was more like the bat was turned into a tracking missile that pulled Domingo along. “Uwaa-, don’t come here with gross movements like thatt-!!” Kanae screamed from the repulsiveness.

“If it something like that then try to compare your strength with me!! I’m going to take your attack without running away!!”

In front of Domingo that was chasing Kanae, Beatrix quickly cut in with her large sword.

- KAKIIIIN!* Weapon and magic power aura collided.

“O divine protection of warrior, double the megin whirling in my body! The will of god spurring me to unlimited fights, in this body! …Meginjord!”

Beatrix obtained the divine protection of strengthening from Norse Mythology’s Diva Thor and pushed back.

“If thou think that this one art skillful in only hitting then it’s a major mistake… o protein residing in this body, combine with my magic power and form a body of steel Clemens… Destroy Steroid(Explosive Flesh Tempering Muscle Art)!!”

As if a balloon had air blown as hard as one could into it, Domingo’s body swelled out several times larger. Her Magic Dress was not torn up though it strained tightly on her. Of course that growth was not from air but it was all muscle. “I want that magic!” Beatrix’s eyes opened wide.

“How does the Diva of baseball do something like that!?” Kanae retorted with a startled face.

“NGOOOOOOOOOOOO!” The enlarged Domingo was pushing at Beatrix.

“Fu-fu-fu… but you cannot win against my beloved muscle that received magic power from Kazuki! Muscle is not about volume, it’s about quality!! FUNNUOOOOOO!!”

“Im, impossible… NGOOOOOOOO-!!”

The muscle daruma was overturned after being outpushed by Beatrix. (TN: Daruma=Tumbling doll)

“Fuh-…it’s interesting doing contest of strength, but being toyed around by Kazuki’s technique is more enjoyable. Kazuki who no matter how I chase and chase yet he keeps getting away… is exciting.” (TN: I don’t know if Beatrix here is saying ‘exciting’, or it’s her saliva spilling out.)

“…Nii-sama being popular didn’t start since just now, but this girl is really a bad news…”

Kanae was looking at Beatrix with completely cold eyes.

“Thy is sinful! My scale changes that sin into heavy mud!”

At that time, Adylle was sending magic power at Kanae and Beatrix.

“Guilty Conscious(Black Mud Imprisonment)!”

The magic power that was emitted from that fingertips coiled around the bodies of the two and produced something that looked like black mud.

“Mu!?” It was heavily punishing the two.

When Beatrix slashed further at Domingo, the weight increased with each of her strikes.

“Sin she said… so this is a magic that imposes weight in response to damage that we inflicted on then. Fufufu, interesting! Show my how heavy you can be!! Show me if you can make me submit with that weight!!”

“Eh… this person, she is a masochist? Sca, scary…” Adylle was trembling.

“Eeei, it’s hard to move with this heaviness!”

Kanae was making a bitter face with her greatest weapon stolen, yet she kept chasing around Thomas with <Kuroneko Michikage> in hand. “Let me use magic too! Don’t chase just me with that spell-obstructing sword!” Thomas ran while crying.

In order to give backup to those people, Kaguya-senpai and Hikaru-senpai and Mio, then Madonna and Ridley, they were firing attack magic and support magic at each other from long range.

“Koyuki! Come on, finish your chanting quickly!!”

When Mio turned to Koyuki saying that, Koyuki replied “Understood” while dribbling with cold sweat from the difficult spell chanting.

Part 3

Unnoticed, the evening sun was going down. The curtain of night was falling down both on Las Vegas dome's outside and inside. The moon that was reflected on the dome and the true moon that was at the other side of the damaged dome were rising up to the sky.

The towering skyscrapers were clad in light of electricity. There was shadows dancing in that light.

"Comprise all possibility, o spider string, cut the wind and fly! The single fleeting string is harder than steel, pulling closer even destiny…! Spiders Drive(Flying Dash Net)!!"

Pure white strings flew from the right wrist of Clark. While the string was like a steel it was thin, its tip was possessing a terrific adhesive power. Clark let flew the spider string to the skyscraper and moved three-dimentionally in the night sky. Just when Kazuki thought that she was dancing in the night sky like Tarzan, she kicked the building and accelerated even more, flying around freely. Even if he could Foresight her movement, it was hard to follow along with that movement.

Kazuki released pure white light from Ame no Murakumo and unleashed its power.

"Become the Yahiroshiro Chidori and soar, <Ame no Murakumo>! Battou Kaikon—Shiratori no Misasagi!!" (TN: Yahiroshiro Chidori=Eight fathom white wisdom bird, might be a name from myth. Shiratori no Misasagi=White Bird's Imperial Mauseloum.)

Just like Yamato Takeru that turned into a white bird and soared to the sky, Kazuki received white wings with soft plumage at his back and pursued Clark in the air. *BANG ! BANG! BANG!* Clark kicked the buildings one after another and flew around in sharp angles relying on the spider strings. Suddenly, Clark grasped with her right hand tightly.

"…Tangle Calamity(Twining Spider String)!!"

Kazuki who was pursuing Clark was lured into a trap before he noticed it. At the zone where Kazuki flapped his wing and entered, there were countless spider threads laid out. Those strings were all connected to the five fingers of Clark's right hand—the instant she made a fist tightly, all of the strings fell all at once onto Kazuki.

The strings that were approaching in super high speed were tough even while being thin—it was the same like a slash that had incomparable sharpness. “You really gave me a lot of trouble, but there is no place to escape for you!” Clark yelled.

- ZING!* All those were approaching from every single direction.

It couldn’t be cut? Did it really couldn’t be cut—he could cut it!

“Show me your power not as a Sacred Treasure but as a single katana, Ame no Murakumo! I am a sword user that won’t shame you!!”

Determining a single string from the countless strings that came flying at him drawing complicated trajectories, Kazuki swung down Ame no Murakumo. If his slash slanted for even a little, then the sword edge would only slide from the string. The swung down flash from moving the muscles of his whole body went through at the right angle with not even a bit of deviation—*PAAN!* The strained string was bisected.

“No way!?” Clark yelled while gliding in the air.

Kazuki who opened a way to escape from the slashes that were besieging him by bisecting one of the strings, slipped through the zone of death. He flapped the wings of a white bird and read which building Clark would fly to next.

Circling ahead to that destination, he finally overtook her.

Tangle Calamity—it was the same name as the technique that man used.

“You really liked Red Metallica didn’t you, Clark!”

Now that they were settling their disputes, he didn’t need to hide that anymore.

“Damn straight! You killing him… made me really furious, Hayashizaki Kazuki!!”

He couldn’t see her expression from her helmet but—Clark spouted out human-like words that were far removed from her impression until now. He thought it was far likable compared to the Clark until now.

“That guy’s fate was to be defeated by someone someday!”

He didn’t have any plan to be a naïve person whose blade would dull from guilt at this late hour now that the situation had reached this point.

“What do you bastard know about Red!”

Facing Kazuki who arrived before her at the building ahead, Clark threw the Vibra Pentagon at her left arm.

Against the flying shield, Kazuki held Ame no Murakumo aloft vertically. The blade ran along the side of the flying shield and with a delicate control the shield tilted diagonally. There was not even a little impact on Ame no Murakumo, the trajectory of the approaching Vibra Pentagon changed and flew past Kazuki in paper-thin difference, breaking the building in its path.

“Acting skillful just with a single sword!”

The eye-visor of Clark’s helmet shone, *ZAP! ZAP!* and beams were fired consecutively. Kazuki flew, slipping through the several streaks of beams and slashed at Clark right from the front.

Clark tried to grab at Kazuki’s sword,

“Kushihebi no Tachi!”

Ame no Murakumo that Kazuki swung undulated, it slipped through and cut apart diagonally.

"I know about you and Red, I caught a glimpse of your and his past!"

Clark's expression distorted in surprise for an instant. Even while her body was shaking from the impact of the smashed magic, Clark landed on the side surface of the building, "Where did you see things like people's past! That's really a shameful act!"

Clark once again kicked at the building and flew at him in a bounce.

"I'll stop the way you all do thing! I won't let you sacrifice anyone anymore!!"

Once again both of them clashed. Kazuki swung down Kushihebi no Tachi once again. The instant the sword's line twisted like a snake, Clark's eye-visor shined with light.

…He was seen through! The instant Kazuki had that hunch, Clark's left hand grabbed Kazuki's Ame no Murakumo.

"I'll say it to you simply! You think I pay sacrifices because I like it huh!!"

With a terrific herculean strength, Kazuki was swung around together with his sword by Clark's left hand. *BOOOM!* He was let go with great momentum and crashed into the building. Splinters were fluttering down in pieces.

…That's right. Now that he fought her he understood, she was doing what she did not because she liked it from the bottom of her heart. Right now, Clark was enjoying fighting a Basileus right from the front.

But she couldn't keep continuing her way.

"You cannot use anything except the power of Sacred Treasures."

Clark stood on top of the destroyed building and talked to Kazuki who was caved in at the wall of the building right ahead.

"I'm observing the situation because I don't know what kind of King's Authority you have but… most likely you don't have any power that you haven't used yet, right now you cannot use anything right?"

Kazuki was startled inside his heart. However he exerted himself to not show that agitation on the surface.

Kazuki was not using the Power of Harmony at himself.

"From your reaction just now, I hit the bull's eye huh." Regardless of Kazuki's expressionless face, Clark drew that conclusion. "Your shoulder is tense you know? That's a reaction of stress."

Of course Kazuki also noticed—Clark too wasn't using King's Authority.

If she used the <Power of Wealth> ahead of him….

"Your fingertips are full of tension there. Even if you endure your stress, it will come out somewhere in your body. You are going to be troubled if I use mine first right?"

"…I wonder if it's fine for you to use yours first?" Kazuki bluffed like that even while he thought that it might be useless.

"I thought exactly like that. I was observing the situation thinking if you have ability like null effect, seal, or deprivation. …But it's fine to discard that worry. Most important of all those Numbers can't hold out. In other words it's like that. You are waiting for the battle at the other side to end."

The gaze behind Clark's visor felt like she was flipping over the card open that he importantly faced down. It was useless no matter what he said.

Clark spread both her arms and chanted loudly like singing.

"…The highly proud hero, is standing here carrying the heroically flapping Stars and Stripes on his shoulder.

Passing the darkness of suffering of a number of nights, until the arrival of the faint light of the dawn.

The Stars and Stripes fluttered throughout the night, until it's wrapped in the joy of victory."

The spread arms were pulsating. From inside Clark, magic power wavelength that was different with Clark herself was welling up like a vortex. It looked similar to someone who was being encroached by a Diva.

"The long darkness of night dwells in my body.

The land that should be saved in the sky, pray to be blessed with victory and peace.

Storing the night of suffering, the power to protect the country to the end is shouldered here.

O riches of sacrifice, o wealth, become spilled black blood and flow in my body."

He had the feeling that the lights of the buildings of Las Vegas were becoming darker. Not only Las Vegas, all of America's civilization and riches were turned into magic power and flowed into Clark.

Cracks were running on her silver suit and helmet.

"I am a proud hero, everything other than Stars and Stripes are going to be dyed black.

O god, o justice, see this jet black clearly."

The silver suit and helmet cracked. Dazzling blonde hair and black magic power brilliantly overflowed out from the broken silver cracks. The Diva's original Magic Dress was overwritten by Clark's own personal pitch black. The raised King's Authority was painted pure black by the jet black methods of the owner.

"Super One(My America)"

The ominous black magic power that overflowed out distorted the Magic Dress irregularly with its left and right looking asymmetric, making it lose its original motif(heroic). What was standing there was a figure that couldn't be called as anything other than a demon. Her helmet was completely broken—exposing bare the unpainted face of Clark who believed herself as justice.

The personification of the black justice was standing in Kazuki's way with her back facing the two moons.

…Judging from the thickness of her Enchant Aura, she was different. It was so different that it made his skin felt frizzy from being opposite of her. Kazuki unintentionally became concerned of his comrades' battle situation.

“…Just now, you were concerned about the other side huh.” It was her usual cold tone that was like steel.

Kazuki kicked the building where he was caved in right away and flapped the wings of the white bird. Without even hiding his intention to buy time, Kazuki attempted to gain distance from Clark.

“…O black will that is residing in the earth, resonate, paint over everything. Gravity Bind(Hand of Creeping Up Power).”

It was as if the flying away Kazuki was pulled by an unseen hand, he was drawn to the ground. He somehow adjusted his stance and landed down. Kazuki sent his gaze at Clark who was jumping down to the ground in pursuit of him. Clark’s silver suit was cracked, from the black protuberance that was growing out all over it, some kind of magic power was emitted. …Even by reading the flow of magic power, Kazuki couldn’t grasp the magic phenomenon’s true character. …Was it gravity?

…Wrong. It was not merely making the body heavier. Blood drew back from inside his head and his consciousness felt like it was getting far away. It was similar like being in anemia, this was…

“It’s magnetism. My black magic power is exerting its influence at the iron inside your blood.”

—The blood that was flowing through his whole body was heading down to the ground, with that his whole body became heavier.

“Your sword skill is the result of your delicate technique right? I wonder how much you can endure with your body sense going mad.”

Clark’s eyes shined, *ZAP!* firing a beam at him. It was not a surprise attack, he could Foresight it. He bent his body back evading that, but his body staggered feebly.

His blood interfered with him… it harmed his body sense to a fatal degree.

“I wonder how much you can hold out with my current magic power!”

With a powerful body with black magic power covering it like an armor, Clark kicked the ground.

“Shut and seal, <Yasakani no Magatama>! Kaicho Kaikon—Hachimon Shibari!!”

Kazuki immediately let loose Yasakani no Magatama. The string of magatama that spread out widely while flying entangled itself at the coming Clark.

“You think the same way will work, against this me!”

The instant the string of magatama tried to restrain Clark, Clark’s body distorted due to the black magic power.

The location of her joints, the shape of her muscles, her original form and nature as a human experienced a sudden change. Like a ninja that escaped a rope binding, no just like an amoeba that naturally could get away from a rope! Clark slipped away from the string of magatama.

“The current me is closer to a Demon Beast than a human!”

Kazuki was shaken. Clark had quit being a human while still retaining her self!

Flesh was nothing more than a container of the soul. But just because of that regulating the absurd transformation on one's own body because of magic power was impossible to do without extraordinary willpower.

If it was normally, just like when the Takasugi brothers turned into Yamata no Orochi, or like when the Chiefs turned into the chimera, their mind would be completely crumbled.

Clark threw away everything except her pride and victory, she even threw away her existence as a human and turned into a monster before assaulting Kazuki.

Clark's right arm swelled out explosively while swinging down at Kazuki. Furthermore the blood in Kazuki's whole body was controlled through magnetism, it was as if he was going to leap at that destructive attack by himself.

"UOOOOOOOOOOOO-!"

Kazuki forcefully controlled his body while yelling. He blocked the enlarged fist of Clark with Ame no Murakumo, without trying to go against that tremendous impact, he warded off the attack with his body handling.

"You really did it huh!" Clark raised an admiring voice.

<Instant Positioning>. The fist that Clark swung with all her power was warded off to the wrong direction and her body posture broke.

No, her posture didn't break—the joints of Clark's body twisted. Distorted. Kazuki immediately noticed.

Even in a posture that was impossible to launch an attack if it was with a human shape—if it was the current Clark then it wouldn't become a problem.

The current her was able to seamlessly unleashed an attack with her whole strength no matter what kind of posture she was in!

She completely ignored the concept of form and combination in martial arts!

Clark's right arm shriveled, this time it was her left arm that expanded imbalancedly. That left arm flew at him turning and twisting like a jelly from an impossible direction.

His blade wouldn't make it in time, Kazuki blocked that fist with Ame no Murakumo's pommel.

By no means he opposed the pressure of the fist—he shifted the vector slightly.

"With your current out of order sense, you think you can do that technique with your sword handle huh!"

"Kuh-!" However against the difference of pressure that was too much, it was Kazuki whose posture was broken.

Right after that, Clark's kick came flying from a direction that should be impossible for a body to bend.

"WHAT THE HELL IS WITH THATTTTT!!" Kazuki reflexively raised a yell of desperation.

Clark’s fierce attack was a [violence] that overturned Kazuki’s identity as a martial artist from its roots. It was as if that body was completely sneering at the martial arts that was trained from human limbs—!

No, it was the end if his mind yielded. …Who would lose here!

Kazuki brought his courage and blocked that kick right from the front.

At the moment of the clash he bent his upper body as much as he could while taking a back step. He rotated his body vertically—like a feather dancing in the wind, he made the impact of the kick vanish like mist.

Kazuki rolled backwards on the asphalt using the momentum.

“Even martial arts looks like acrobatics when it reaches the extreme huh! But you cannot run anymore from there!!”

Clark’s right hand enlarged to crush Kazuki while swinging down.

The ground was at his back—there was nothing he could do anymore.

Kazuki was crushed by the palm of a giant and caved into the asphalt. His defensive magic power ruptured and completely gone. If he was caved into the ground then martial arts wouldn’t do a damn at all. Clark raised her right hand and then like a child throwing a tantrum she kept hitting over and over.

Still not yet!? Kazuki yelled inside his heart. Was his intention not conveyed to Koyuki…!?

At that time, from a separate distance that was in the middle of battle, a large magic power was swelling, a cold that was felt even until this side was generated. He knew this magic power.

—Diamond Dust□Absolute Zero!

“…So the Numbers got done in!”

Clark clicked her tongue, while even now she was going to persistently swing down her palm to Kazuki.

‘It’s fine already, borrowing everyone’s power…!

—That instant, with the Power of Harmony, Kazuki concentrated all the magic power everyone had to himself.

Vitality overflowed through his whole body, powerfully accelerating him. This was everyone’s… Power of Harmony!

Like a squashed spring springing up from the recoil, Kazuki shook himself free from the asphalt and stood up. He held up Ame no Murakumo at the swung down giant palm.

It was not parrying the attack, he opposed it right from the front!

Vast magic power and magic power clashed and shockwaves exploded.

Stepping firmly on the rising ground, Kazuki’s two legs broke the asphalt further while the asphalt got buried to the ground, Clark’s body floated. With that Kazuki finally leaped back and he was able to recover some distance.

“Kazu-nii!” “Kazuki!” “Otouto-kun!” “Nii-sama!”

While several of his comrades called at him, they rushed to his side.

“Burn to ash all that you touch… the flame embrace without any place to go! Self Burning□Embrace!!”

With Mio transformed into Chouki Magician her magic was reinforced, with that Kazuki was wrapped in armor of flame that was like the wings of the undying bird enclosing him in an embrace.

“Lightning placed on yearning granting the lightning thought and god speed… wake up the sleeping lion! Connect Ligthning(True Spirit Thunder God)!!”

With Hikaru-senpai transformed into Chouki Magician, her reinforcement magic could be targeted to someone else other than her which she used at Kazuki, it accelerated his body.

“Sink even the splendor, lock in the eternal freeze o stream of black freeze… my betrayer is also there! Judeca Cocytus(River of Unceasing Freezing Grief)!”

“O tear of mermaid, reveal the grief of your heart to the world. That neighboring chair with no person, the blank space of album, wake them up in the freezing world… SolitaryWhite Album(Lonesome Ice White)!”

Kaguya-senpai and Koyuki, with their transformation to Chouki Magician they released ice magic that had its power reinforced to Kazuki’s direction. The black and white freezing air whirled like a spiral towards him.

“Carry the mystery in your blade crest, <Ame no Murakumo>! Battou Kaikon—Tsumugari no Taichi!!”

In one swing Kazuki tore apart the two color of freezing air with Ame no Murakumo. With the Sacred Treasure’s power that controlled every natural phenomenon, the freezing air was thoroughly compressed inside the sword blade.

…He felt as if he had obtained a combat ability that could oppose his opponent.

Clark took a glance at Kazuki’s comrades that came running.

“…So the Numbers, lost to the Japanese that wasn’t helped by Britain’s Basileus.”

“Don’t think that I’m defiling this one-on-one fight okay.”

Kazuki said that from his awkwardness of relying on his comrades.

“I’m not looking for anything like a one-on-one fight.”

“You liar, you enjoyed it right?”

Clark’s expression shook hearing what Kazuki pointed out.

“I enjoyed it you know. Though in the latter half it’s already the best I can do to just endure.”

Clark chuckled ‘kuku’. “You are a charming man huh.”

Looking at that smiling face… Kazuki rethought back Clark as a human. Thinking about it, even while he was thinking of her as a monster, he was also feeling her human aspect all along while fighting her.

“…The one who take out the power of America’s civilization and wealth first is me. Then this is not anything like a one-on-one fight, it’s a fight to compare the things we shouldered.”

“That’s right huh, I too have things that I shouldered…!”

Kazuki prepared his freezing blade. With that as the signal, Clark who was honestly waiting for Kazuki to take his stance leaped at Kazuki.

Sword and fist clashed. Kazuki tilted his blade and parried the fist. Clark distorted her whole body again and let loose a barrage of full swings from an impossible posture.

But compared to before, she was an instant slower. …Clark's fist that was blocked by his blade froze from the chill and by approaching Kazuki closer her body was burned by flames. The impact of her smashed magic constantly paralyzed Clark's body a little.

Kazuki whose flesh and mind were accelerated overtook that barrage this time. Like a willow swayed by the wind, he cancelled all of their momentum. His combat strength was completely overtaking it.

"Are you matching the current me equally… this me that is shouldering this many things…!?"

At the other side of the heat of the flame, a slight fury was appearing at her human look.

Her smiling face just now, and this fury too, was cues of emotions that wouldn't exist in a person that had thrown away her humanity.

"The thing that I shouldered is also not light."

"Bonds you mean… that's the power of greed."

"You cast away too much of everything."

"This means that this is a battle between me that threw away all that I have, and you who fights in order to protect…!"

That moment, as if a steel mask was broken, emotions overflowed at Clark's face.

A fist of fury came striking at Kazuki. Kazuki followed that speed and blocked with his blade that was carrying chill. It became a strained blade locking contest, the face of the two drew near at each other's.

Clark bared her fang at Kazuki with a ghastly expression.

"In other words this is a chicken race of whose desires goes farther! Those Indians throw away everything and didn't desire anything! That kind of thing is just running away…! I throw away everything except the barest pride as bet! That is… the way I do things as a weakling that was born in the street!!"

"I desire everything! All of my comrades, I won't throw any single one of them!"

"You naïve brat! If you have the confidence to not lose to anyone to do that then just try it! …I won't lose to someone like you!! Lose to me in this place… and lose everything!!"

From Clark… he could feel an excessive emotional strain.

Kazuki parried a fist fueled by anger by turning around his body. Clark's posture was destroyed, however from there she modified her body and incessantly tried to repeat her attack—her jet black body stiffened with its shape still human. At that time, Clark failed her modification.

Right now in this moment, Clark was completely returning to human.

Her mind was wavered from the clash of her will against Kazuki's will.

The moment human expression came to her surface, she became unable to wield that power perfectly.

"What happened…!?" Clark raised an agitated yell. The act of distorting your own flesh body was impossible when the mind couldn't cast away your own humanity. Clark was completely unaware of it herself.

"Otouto-kun, don't lose!" A cheer came from Kaguya-senpai.

He thought that he didn't want to show her his disgraceful appearance.

Kazuki's power of bond exhibited its power exactly because it was exerted by human emotion.

"There is no way I'll lose to you, Clark Moore!!"

Kazuki's second slash, overflowing with emotion, captured Clark's stiffened body.

Super high speed sword and fist crossed each other on countless occasions—which one hit the opponent, which one hit empty air, people other than the two were absolutely unable to perceive what was happening.

But during the several times, several tens of times, during the exchange of slash and fist, in a little bit of time the magic power of one side was obviously shaved. The impact of the smashed magic from each time of that pushed the stance of defense and offense into disadvantage, Clark who wasn't in her demon form anymore couldn't rally herself using the flesh modification.

The magic power and concentration of the both of them were all poured into this intensifying offense and defense, there was no gap to exchange chant.

Several hundred. This wouldn't be decided in one go by a grand magic, only paper-thin slashes tilting the trend to one side bit by bit, these offense and defense sliced to pieces even the mind of the inferior side.

Clark opened wide her eyes that were dyed deep red in rage. At that moment a critical hit ran diagonally through Clark's shoulder until her hips.

Finally, Clark's body was sinking behind while she was looking up to the sky.

"You don't lose anything."

Kazuki accosted the collapsed Clark like that.

"I'll also protect America to stay America. I won't change anything."

Against those words of Kazuki—there were two people among Kazuki's comrades that were rushing to him, that showed symmetrical reaction.

Arthur whose objective was to spread to the world the faith of the chief god that he was contracted with, and Shouko who was the leader of Ryouzanpaku that opposed the ideology of invasion of Chukadou. Arthur's expression was a little bitter, he had hesitation, while Shouko's expression had a faint smile.

Clark made a single sigh as if exhaling out her soul from the bottom of her stomach, and accepted those words.

Part 4

"King! …King!!"

A messenger rushed into Las Vegas' dome and froze in place from the shock of witnessing that scene. Looking at his master Clark fall down, was an unthinkable sight for him.

"What?" Although most of her magic power was used up, Clark still retained her Magic Dress. That fact made the messenger even more bewildered, but Clark ordered "Don't worry about it, just report."

"Those Indians' holy land is…! Wakan Tanka is!!"

Clark's complexion changed.

America still hadn't arrived at their goal.

"Wakan Tanka is closing in! It moved while swallowing the soldiers…!"

Something dreadful was happening exactly in the battlefield of Colorado River.

Kazuki and co. and Clark exited the dome in panic, they cut across the downtown. When they left the metropolitan area, at the far away distance was Colorado River. Even further, at its other side, the Grand Canyon was the expected sight of the wasteland spreading out. Until now with how often the Indians attacked and the North American Knight Order meeting them there, the land was turned into wasteland.

Right now the all-out war of South-North America was performed on that battlefield. Great numbers of soldiers were collapsing in magic intoxication. But the battle itself was already ending. Most of the collapsed soldiers were the Indians.

What was terrifying was not that.

From the other side of Colorado River—a green tsunami was advancing.

The jungle that looked as if it was burning blanketed the horizon and approached towards this direction.

Trees that grew densely. When he reinforced his eyesight—the innumerable numbers of trees were wriggling their roots like tentacles to wander through the ground. There were also the appearance of animals and bugs among the trees, all of those were all heading to the direction of here—towards Las Vegas in a dash, it was possible they might even be flying.

Mother Nature in unison.

“UWAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!”

North America’s mechanized soldiers and Magika Stigmas were running about to escape while raising their screams.

The advancing Mother Nature was trampling the people left behind on the battlefield. The collapsed soldiers that couldn’t escape were crushed underfoot by the advancing trees, pierced by root, from there they withered after being sucked dry from nutrition, made into smooth and dry soil. It didn’t care whether it was done to the soldiers of North America or to the Indians.

Artificial objects that were just rubble were also smashed by the roots, that thing was advancing closer to Las Vegas.

That was… Wakan Tanka!? Then, in its center was…

“Clark! …As expected, isn’t Medicine Wheel moving like this!?”

“Yes… there was no positive proof that it was just as you said. But if I was going to defeat both you and also Medicine Wheel using this chance, then there was nothing that I could do but betting that she couldn’t move. However… I was mistaken. There was no figure of Medicine Wheel among the elite units that launched the surprise attack and among the main force that came after them, so I concluded that she couldn’t move just as I thought.”

Because Medicine Wheel didn’t move together with one of the two, both the elite units led by the Chiefs and also the Indian main force at Colorado river were annihilated. Certainly even Kazuki couldn’t imagine that all of those might possibly just be a decoy.

{Clark…} From the advancing jungle, a voice came through magic power. There was no mistake that it was Medicine Wheel’s voice.

{The gamble is my win. I had imagined already that if I came with delayed timing, you were going to have a falling out with Japan’s Basileus on your own accord. After all, I know very well about your methods.}

“Because of that all of your comrades experienced a crushing defeat!” Kazuki cut in between the two.

{Indian is…}

When Medicine Wheel noticed the figures of Kazuki and his group, she stopped her predation and emitted her voice.

{Not fearing death.}

…She had no problem at all with what had happened to her comrades. As far as Indian Mythology was concerned, such thing didn’t need any second thought.

Clark chuckled.

“She got me… this is the first time Eimi served me a total defeat like this. I never even imagined that you could possibly hatch this kind of scheme.”

{I had decided, that I will deceive Nee-san for just only once. There is no way I can win against the serious Nee-san after all. I had decided, that I will kill Nee-san with my first and only single lie since I was born… since several years ago.}

"After walking on top of thin ice all this time… finally a day where I missed my reading twice in a day has come, I really got burned today."

While taking a breath that felt frail somehow, Clark walked towards Wakan Tanka.

Her gait was like a ghost. "Kill me." Clark said with a small yet firm voice.

Magic power swelled up from Wakan Tanka.

"Clark!!"

Kazuki immediately stretched his hand to try pulling Clark back—his hand was swept off by Clark.

The next moment, along with a sound *whoosh* of cutting wind from Wakan Tanka that was still separated several kilometers from them, a long tentacle of ivy soared and entangled Clark. The tentacle of ivy raised up Clark lightly and pulled her towards Wakan Tanka.

"…I had decided that I will be the one to defeat Medicine Wheel. I was resolved that the time my reading missed is the time where I die. And then… it's my wish that if I'm to be killed then it's by Eimi's hands."

"Clark!?"

Kazuki called out, but Clark was pulled right towards death.

Even more countless tentacles of ivy were extending out, aiming at Clark's heart—

"…Giant Killing!"

—At that time a small bullet was flying at Wakan Tanka, stopping Wakan Tanka's ivies' movement completely. Kazuki turned back towards that magic power source.

It was a really small magic power. Nevertheless that single shot was heavy. The one who fired the heavy bullet carrying the jet black, was Jeremy Barret.

Wakan Tanka's movement was stopping. The power of Basileus was sealed. Clark was released from the binding of the ivy, she was falling towards the ground.

"Jeremy!?" Even Clark turned back with her face changing color.

At the previous battle, the girl had sealed Kazuki's Basileus' power with a bullet where she had put all of her magic power into it, she should have already left the battlefield. Right now, what did this girl put into the bullet?

"A bet of loose change, can only seal her just for a little time…"

Blood burst out from Jeremy's mouth, she sent her gaze towards Kazuki.

"Take care of King…"

Leaving just those words, Jeremy fell down on the wasteland.

The girl had truly abandoned her everything. What she put into her bullet was—no other than her life.

Kazuki became aware of the sealed authority of King Solomon being liberated inside him.

With force as if her previous ghost-like gait was just a lie, Clark rushed over to Jeremy.

“…You idiot. You are not my puppet or anything…”

Clark whispered while holding Jeremy’s upper body in her arms.

“Even though I planned for just you to live safely…!”

“Don’t you dare to throw away your life so easily, Clark!”

Kazuki also rushed over. Jeremy’s devotion that abandoned her life for Clark’s sake, and Clark’s despair that let herself get dragged totteringly into death, even though it looked similar but the weights of the two were completely different.

For Jeremy’s sake too, Kazuki had to rebuke Clark.

“I noticed when I was agitated while fighting you. I’m… tired already of all this. Both Red and also Jeremy are gone already. This country is just a hell.”

The woman who was defeated by Kazuki and lost her justice, talked with a voice so crestfallen that he doubted that it really came out from her mouth. What was left for this woman was only her bloodstained hands.

“Even so, live. Exhaust yourself for this country until your very limit. Probably that’s your pride. However, so that you can live without needing to dirty your hands more further… I’ll protect you for sure.”

Kazuki stood up protecting Clark, he turned his gaze to Wakan Tanka.

“…You are not a sweet guy at all huh.” Clark murmured.

Wakan Tanka was pulsating a little. The seal at its power was already in the process of unraveling.

“What do we do? We can also run away you know?”

From the group of Kazuki’s comrades, Shouko was making a pouting face.

“From the feel that I got watching it just now, when that Wakan Tanka was moving while taking in things into itself, its advance was slow. If we circled to Las Vegas’s rear, then we should be able to rest and recover some magic power while Wakan Tanka is trampling all over Las Vegas and advancing at us.”

It was a calm analysis that was worth hearing once, but Kazuki shook his head without giving it any consideration.

“Don’t say something stupid. I’m going to protect Las Vegas. I’m not going to make this country into hell anymore.”

At that time, Mary and Ginny that were nursed by Lotte and Miyabi-senpai had already woke up, they were focusing their gazes straight at Kazuki.

“America’s… hero…” Ginny murmured.

Shouko stood shoulder-to-shoulder with Kazuki and faced Wakan Tanka.

“…Seeing it I changed my thinking a little. Something like realism without ideal is quite brittle. Well, right now I’m going to fight together with you.”

“Wasn’t it that your magic power got emptied if you used Taikyokuzu?”

“It’s obvious that something like that is just an excuse to play hooky. …I’m going to do a valid work, so just circulate the magic power rapidly with your Power of Harmony.”

Kazuki felt Shouko becoming a target of the Power of Harmony, the bond with her was created.

Roshouko—38. Finally she gave him her recognition, was she?

“I guess it’s inexcusable for me to keep always making only you the one who fights alone. I too will get serious a little.”

Arthur leisurely walked out from the group of his comrades.

Kazuki opened his eyes wide hearing Arthur saying he was going to get serious.

“I am the second coming of Arthur Pendragon. The protection promised to us right here.”

Arthur’s British suit that was also his symbol was disintegrated into light, his body changed from that shining Magic Dress.

The armor that protected that body as knight was not a sturdy steel, it was made from shining yellow and blue jewels that were overflowing with elegance. The head was decorated with a crown, a mantel that was overflowing with majesty fluttered at that back.

And then all of those things had high exposure rate—exposing white and smooth skin.

Reflexively Kazuki’s gaze was first absorbed at the two swelling globes that were drooping heavily, his reacton really couldn’t be helped.

“…What are you looking at?”

Arthur hid her breasts while glaring at Kazuki. No, by no means he was looking at that with suspicious eyes!

“As I thought you are really a girl aren’t you?”

“I’m not a girl, a woman. I’m the older one here. Please stop that way of calling as if you are looking at a cute person.” Arthur put her hand on her hips and sniffed arrogantly.

“I wasn’t particularly hiding it, but… this is because I’m the reincarnation of Arthur Pendragon, the past and future king who is resurrected from Avalon in order to save Britain when the country falls into a predicament.”

Reincarnation—so the contract in Britain was perceived like that.

Therefore, that was why Arthur introduced herself with the identical name of the Diva King Arthur she was contracted with.

Wakan Tanka squirmed once more.

The trees that were forming that jungle, and also the swarm of living things inside it were beginning to move, they resumed their advance.

There were countless plants and animals in that holy land but—based on the Chiefs’ words [everything in one], he guessed that everything of that jungle were moving in accordance with Medicine Wheel’s will.

And then perhaps as the main body, or perhaps as the controller, there was no doubt that Medicine Wheel was located in the center of that dense jungle.

“Let’s charge straight in one go until the center.”

Kazuki allocated back magic power to his comrades and called out so.

The remaining amount of magic power was not much, but number was necessary in order to cut across to the center of the jungle. It was not difficult to imagine that the instant they stepped their foot into that Wakan Tanka, every plant and animal inside it would obstruct them.

“Seems a little troublesome. I’ll open the path right away. Exactly because there is a Sacred Treasure that is the most suitable for this kind of situation that I offered to cooperate seriously.”

Arthur smoothly came out in front of everyone.

“O white spear, carry that glimmer of star in that tip, carry the light of sun in that tip, make run and run that flash and rout the million army! Rhongomynyad(White Spear of Running Through Flash)!!”

A terrific white light was created in Arthur’s hand, the light was compressed long and narrow becoming a tall spear that might have reached 5 meters. With pure whiteness as if its handle and also its spear tip itself were emitting light, the spear tip was becoming bizarrely wide like the head of a hammerhead shark.

Rhongomynyad—if one was talking about King Arthur’s weapons, then after Excalibur it was none other than this spear. In fact, at times when King Arthur was without his Excalibur, the weapon he held in his hands was this white spear at the decisive battle.

“Follow me!”

Arthur flapped her mantel, she held her spear horizontally and dashed to Wakan Tanka. Kazuki and the others were also following behind her just like they were told. Wakan Tanka assaulted them openly, countless tentacles of vine lengthened out just like before. At that moment Arthur’s dash didn’t slow down for even a little, riding her speed she thrust forward her spear with the sound of cleaved wind. That thrust summoned a terrific wind, the shining light of the white spear rode that wind and burst out while spreading in a radial shape.

Rather than calling that a spear thrust, it was a phenomenon that should be called a beam firing. With that one swing, the white spear wrapped in light liberated all of the magic power hidden inside it and annihilated everything in front of it.

King Arthur’s [war results] that was talked in legends was always about him alone scattering apart a large army. That peerless act was impossible to be settled in the framework of human’s martial arts.

The beam that was like a weapon of mass destruction blew away all the vine tentacles while hitting Wakan Tanka directly. The thick beam pierced a spot of the jungle that grew densely in a dome shape. The trees at that beam’s direct path, the plants and animals, all were extinguished in an instant.

A straight hole was opened in the jungle that didn’t have a single gap before. A path was created.

“Let’s go!” Arthur took the lead and leaped into the path that she had wrenched open herself. Kazuki and others followed behind her even while being shocked by the tremendousness of the beam.

Inside Wakan Tanka was much darker even compared to night. The several layers of overlapping leafs and branches obstructed all light, there was only the aroma of dense greenery filling the space to the brim without leaking outside. It reminded Kazuki of Fuji’s sea of trees. Kazuki and others ran while their eyes shone with magic power reinforcement. The trees were stretching out vines, the thick trunks and branches twisted, attacking Kazuki and his group. Birds and butterflies and mosquitoes were also flying at them. There were also monkeys jumping from branch to branch at them. Mother Nature was closing in from every direction.

“These guys are something like puppets manipulated by magic power! Then… that is the rod of god shooting out the soul! Summon the wave that disturbs the origin god right here! Dashinben!!”

While running, Shouko created in her grasp a plain wood rod that was the symbolic Sacred Treasure of her contracted Diva Taikoubou. With the space where she swung it as the center, undulating magic power reverberated. It was a roar inaudible to the ears that attacked the mind. Originally it was a power that disrupted all spell chanting without questioning ally or enemy, it granted a severe bug to the animals and plants that moved using magic power. The command that was moving to them was disturbed, making their movements turn completely crazy.

“That attack is magnificently effective!” Arthur praised Shouko’s quick-wittedness.
Kazuki and his group swept off the animals and plants that were in a state of confusion with weapons and magic while they kept advancing forward.

Light was visible from the other side of the darkness. When they ran toward the light while driving off the hindrances, they came out at an open space that looked like a plaza. Only that place looked bright like it was afternoon because of the person sitting at the center emitting light like a sun.
Over there was a giant baobab tree so large that it made one want to call it the world tree.
At the height where they needed to looked up just a little, there was a large disk like a wheel on the tree trunk. A girl was fixed in that disk with both her hands spread out in a crucifix shape.
“So you all came this far.”
The ephemeral girl leaked out such voice. There was no doubt this was Medicine Wheel.
“I won’t let you destroy America any further than this.”
“I am not destroying. I am turning everything into one to create the new world order. Everything exists in Wakan Tanka(here)…”
The wheel behind Medicine Wheel rotated for a fourth of its sizes.
Ivies and branches were stretching out rustlingly from the surrounding trees. The figures of insects and birds, and monkeys appeared.
“We are going to hold back the hindrances, so Otouto-kun and Arthur take care of Medicine Wheel!”
With Kaguya-senpai as the first, his comrades spread out to deal with the attacking plants and animals encircling them at the surrounding. Around Medicine Wheel and Arthur and Kazuki who were facing her, sparks of magic powers were scattered forming a circle, beginning the battle.
“Wakan Tanka(Here) contains all phenomenon…”
The wheel behind Medicine Wheel turned for a fourth of its size.
Around it several balls of fire were floating.
“Arthur, most likely the opponent is using magic of nature phenomenon. I will use defensive magic, so Arthur, you attack.”
Kazuki whispered at Arthur. Arthur nodded with an agreeing noise.
“You can use defensive magic of all elements… with your rarely found Foresight technique and sword skill to ward off attacks, thinking about it there is no Magika Stigma as excellent as you in protection. Surely, you will form a matchless pair with Regina’s Resist technique. And then, certainly, attacking is my forte. We form a good combination don’t we.”
The fire balls coiled itself and rained down on the pair. “O the calling voice of the ruler of flame, release the rage of the bottom of the earth! Create my rampart right here… tower the sky and the earth, partition the impurity! Fire Wall!!” Kazuki erected a fire wall and blocked the fire balls.

“Gold snake blow fire, lit the light of torch of thousand… the blade that is damp from that brightness, bisect all creation! Excalibur(The Glorious Sword of King)!!”

Arthur slashed at the tree where Medicine Wheel was fixed with a shining sword. That blade made a definite wound at the surface of the barrier that was laid out by the tree.

Next sparks of electrical discharge danced around Medicine Wheel, making lightning ran through Kazuki and Arthur. “O rejection of absolute zero, become the armor of isolation that protects my body! Freeze Barrier!” Kazuki gathered cold that was generated from magic and water vapor in the air at the front, creating a wall of water. The lighting energy was flowed into the ground from the high conductivity of water, scattering the lightning. And then Arthur swung Excalibur earnestly without paying any mind to her defense.

“That’s awful.” Medicine Wheel leaked out an ephemeral voice timidly.

“For two Basileus to gang up and bully me…”

“For a Basileus of all people, saying something so childish!” Arthur didn’t relent and continued swinging her treasured sword.

“It’s scary you know… But you can only say such a thing because you don’t know true fear.”

“What?” Arthur stopped her sword and made her awareness to take vigilance.

The wheel behind Medicine Wheel further rotated for a fourth of its size.

“…I’ll teach you. All the cycle of death and rebirth is flowing through Wakan Tanka(here)…”

Instantly, sparks scattered inside Kazuki’s head.

The next moment, a blade was stabbed through Kazuki’s stomach. His defensive magic power was gone. The feeling of the blade moving felt like an extremly slow motion. The sharp edge pressed inside the soft skin, tearing the skin nicely. From there the blade didn’t meet any resistance and pushed aside fat and muscle while roughly scraping the bone, tearing down the intestines like tofu, the blade’s tips kept sinking deeper, thrusting out from his back. Air flowed into his insides cooly. The blade was sweeping to the side. While Kazuki’s exhausted body fell sideways, the blade was drawing a hot line in cutting apart Kazuki. His stomach was bisected from the middle, then the blade flew out from his body. Kazuki was watching that while his body was declining down to the side. A beat after that, bright red blood and split intestines flowed out from the wound. —He couldn’t keep calm. Kazuki writhed around from pain that seemed like burning his stomach from the inside. It didn’t cause instant death, yet precisely because of that the shocking image of his own pink colored intestines was burned clearly into his mind. Kazuki writhed around for about five minutes from that pain, until before long his consciousness was clouded from his declining blood pressure and he died from shock.

The next moment, the crown of Kazuki's head was split into two by a sword. He felt as if the whole world was smashed up from the terrific impact of his skull being struck really hard. His skull was splendidly broken open, making the outline of his head distorted like a rubber ball. The sword passed through his flabby head vertically… through… His consciousness lapsed into pieces. It was because his nerve network was destroyed earlier than the death coming for him. He understood that. Actually, he also saw his own brain splattered all over outside. His consciousness shouldn't still work from that. The blade passed through the bridge of his nose and tore his neck too, finally it stopped around his chest, there Kazuki collapsed from his knee, his limbs that were unconsciously twitching sloppily scratched off his own blood and brain matter while he fell down. For a while his thought couldn't form anything and only the consciousness of the electric signal of his brain flickering on and off dimly was left to him, but soon even that was closed inside the darkness.

The next moment, a rope was fastened around Kazuki's neck. At the same time the wooden plank under his feet disappeared. The rope was just once stretching loosely before soon it strained tightly, making all his weight focus on his neck vertebrae. Kazuki's body moved around in the air for a while as if he was being toyed around by a sea wave. His white neck was blotted with red. His face swelled up into a purple color, and his eyeballs and tongue jumped out. Even girls that loved Kazuki would surely avert their eyes looking at his gruesome face right now. Feces spilled out endlessly from his lower body and both his legs tensed tightly like a bow. But Kazuki still lived. While being aware of his eyeballs jumping out, his neckbones were little by little creak… creak… making such a creaking sound, he still lived. His body couldn't even twitch, while he was embracing the sensation of his body dangling in the air with both his legs pulled by gravity, his consciousness was still there. The battle between gravity and his neck vertebrae continued for ten minutes, and little by little, his thought was being closed into the darkness.

[Death] was repeated many times over. Kazuki immediately understood that it was only illusions, but that understanding didn't help him at all, he was continuously repeating [death] as if he was being toyed with by raging waves in the middle of a storm.

Before he knew Kazuki fell down with his face up looking at his own corpse. Inside Kazuki's corpse, there was still around one kilogram germ still living. The germ began dismantling the protein. First the binding between the skin and meat was dismantled. The skin was slackening down laxly. The color of his skin changed into reddish brown, it began to turn transparent, where he could faintly see through at his internal organs. These changes spread with the many germs spreading from his abdomen to his whole body. Before long the color was changing into green, due to his decomposing blood oozing out from his blood vessels, webbed pattern was rising to the surface. That rotting figure was still reminisced of Kazuki's vestiges when he was alive. However the surface of the skin gradually began to foam unevenly, swelling all over. Due to the germs dismantling the protein, it produced gas that expanded Kazuki's body until three times the original size. The body's limbs wriggled from the gas expansion. His eyeballs popped out from the gas pressure and spilled over.

The bluish black skin finally raised sound before it was torn off. From the disintegrating internal organs, decayed blood and pus were overflowing out and spread around the body. It was not a person anymore but merely a rotten flesh balloon. And then it returned back into the earth.

Kazuki was having a bird-eye view of the thing called death. He was deliberately made to take a straight look at hidden things like blood, internal organs, and brain. Usually someone had surely once or twice imagined how much graphic of what existed under their skin. If humans didn't forget that, they wouldn't be able to retain their sanity to spend their ordinary days. But even girls like Mio or Kaguya-senpai, under their white porcelain skin was also fully packed with grotesque things. And then someday they would die, and rot—the inescapable dreadful demise that was impossible to escape for any kind of living thing, death!

Kazuki was made to affirm that moment where every meaning came to an end! Forcefully!

Someone with some kind of right stole that from himself! Stop it!!

Kazuki was made to personally experience every form of death. He hallucinated death many times over. It was many times, but every single death was eternally infinite. That darkness was similar when he fell asleep, but a normal sleep had the blessing of waking up before one noticed where there was no death awaiting him anymore. His consciousness was vanishing, he couldn't think of anything, it continued for eternity. Kazuki was continuously made to perceive that infinity in any kind of pattern in concurrent parallel. Death was continuing inside the infinite parallel universe.

He was having a bird-eye view of all those from somewhere. Kazuki trembled violently from terror. He imagined himself becoming unable to even fear anymore and he trembled violently. The destruction of [his familiar self]. The decay of blood and internal organs, and then eternal unfeeling, unthinking…

{To escape from this terror, there is only one way.}

There was a girl's voice. It was like a single ray of hope that was presented to him. In fact, at that time, the infinite parallel images of death had stopped.

{Loss is scary because yourself is self-aware. If you throw away the individual that is you… if you become a part of Wakan Tanka… there is nothing that is scary.}

Kazuki was not calm anymore. He was listening to that voice as if clinging to the voice of god.

{What kind of meaning is there to keep living as it is? The time where you fear death, will continue until you die. And then the nothingness of eternity that is absolutely hard to accept will arrive. What is called living, is nothing more than a process of changing from fear to nothingness. Then it's better to not fear nothingness right from the start. If you throw away your self right from the start, nothingness becomes not scary. That is not nothingness but everything. If you merge into all and become an existence that's only happy, do you know how comfortable it will be…}

—That's so. Is that so? His thinking that was paralyzed by fear, strongly pushed him to entrust everything to that whisper. But somewhere inside his heart, the small thought that was still remaining even while his everything was crushed by the infinite parallel death was throwing doubt [Is that so?] at him.

From the surrounding darkness, green ivies were gushing forth rustlingly and entangled Kazuki's hands and feet. Keeping like that the ivies were going to carry Kazuki away somewhere.

Is it really fine with something like this—?

{That's wrong! That's wrong you know, paapa!!}

From inside the darkness of everything, a beautiful voice that shined brilliantly reverberated.

{You must not get over the fear of death with this kind of way!}

Inside the darkness, a faint white light was floating.

{That time when I died, I was thankful to paapa and maama, so I won't approve that paapa to do something like this.}

The white light turned into a shape of a girl, that small hand grasped Kazuki's hand.

"Stella…?"

{Medicine Wheel is making paapa look directly at only death. She is trying to mislead paapa that everything is meaningless by showing demise. It's a view point that is so unfair like that you know! It's a swindle! It's something on the same level as wild delusions that flash inside the head when you sleep alone at night. Just because you are scared of parting, does the encounter become meaningless? What about my encounter with paapa?}

There was no way it was meaningless. Kazuki embraced tight the shining figure of the girl. All the binding ivies were torn off, the girl's warmth was spreading all over his body.

"Stella! I'm glad I can meet you one more time…!"

The instant he heard Stella's voice, the instant he hugged her tightly, just what in the world was this happiness that welled up inside his chest. Certainly he would lose this eventually. However thinking about only the losing, getting scared, completely forgetting this happiness, there was no way that was okay.

For him to experience this happiness more than others, this was what it meant to be a human!

To lose your individuality and become one with something unknown… he thought of such thing sweetly until just now, but now he thought of it as repulsive. He was made to realize that it was no different at all with death.

{Paapa, you cannot stay in this kind of place. Let's return quickly. To the place where everyone is…}

At that time the illusion of [eternal nothingness] that was created by someone, was torn apart. {It's this way!} Stella pulled Kazuki's hand.

Suddenly inside Kazuki's head, his mother's words flashed.

{…Kazuki, thank you for being born.}

That's right—that was absolutely, not something mistaken.

When he came to himself, Kazuki had returned to the world of reality.

Was Arthur still fighting the same illusion that was shown to Kazuki, she was lying on the ground. Around him Kazuki comrades that believed in him were continuing to fight the animals and plants. How much time had passed?

Something like the fear of death, was nothing more than the other side of the joy of living.

"It cut loose one's faith towards the Mythology, inviting one into the world of death… a magic that cares not of the strength of magic power or King's Authority. That's why even Arthur is still not waking up. Despite so, how…"

Medicine Wheel was staring at the waking up Kazuki with eyes that couldn't believe of what it was seeing.

And then besides Kazuki, was Stella smiling at him.

Born as a slave, killed at the Indian's hands, and made into a part of the Great Spirit, but even so she went against that fate, the girl that won a brief freedom to meet Kazuki.

It was the girl who adored Kazuki and Kaguya-senpai as father and mother.

"Stella…"

When Kazuki reflexively reached out his hand to that figure, his hand slipped through her. It was an avatar.

"You are the hindrance…?" Medicine Wheel moved her eyes to Stella. "For a betrayer to exist inside Great Spirit(me)…"

Is that so… just now, he was locked inside the mind of Great Spirit. But inside that Great Spirit, there was Stella who rejected unification with Great Spirit even though she had been already absorbed.

{Paapa had already beat this Great Spirit or whatever since a long time ago you know. That time, paapa saved the heart of me who was fated to be absorbed into Great Spirit. For me, rather than something like the power of Mother Nature, paapa and maama are far more reassuring!}

"Exactly like that girl said!" A voice came from behind.

When he turned back there was Clark, coming from the path that was gouged open by Rhongomynyad which Kazuki and the others had travelled.

“Nee-san…” Medicine Wheel whispered.

“It’s exactly like that girl said! Mother Nature is great! But, that’s all there is to it! Stop putting mystique hoax on it to make that as the escape of your weak heart! Red had said it, the Indian Mythology right now is distorted, that the original soul of Indian is not there!”

“…Even so, I cannot stop denying Nee-san’s way of thinking. Nee-san who didn’t care of what kind of sacrifice you made just so I can rise in the world, I’m always scared of that Nee-san since a long time ago. Nee-san is worshipping the strong from your position as the weak.”

Clark was made silent from the blaming of a genuine weak person.

“If it keeps like this, America will be destroyed by other Magic Advanced Countries… It’s scary. Everything has to be painted out by Mother Nature, everything has to become one under this power. If not then we cannot escape from fear. As long as everything doesn’t become one, the dual nature of the weak and the strong will be created, those who are oppressed will appear…”

“That’s wrong, power is not something that exists to oppress! People obtained the power to change their willpower into strength, is for the sake of protecting people other than themselves!”

“Right now, a fight due to us denying each other’s country is going to occur.”

“I’ll proof to you the strength of the power to protect with that fight! I will protect you too! In order to do that… right now, I’m going to defeat you!”

“I… will kill the strong you and absorb you…!”

The wheel behind Medicine Wheel rotated through the final fourth of its size.

“Heaven and earth produce together with me, all creation become one with me… O the pulsation of everything in one, wash away all the world’s error and correct it…”

Medicine Wheel and the giant tree she was unified with sucked magic power from the earth, they were shining with green light. Medicine Wheel was going to become one with the magic power of this star itself!

“As much as possible become like this…!”

The two hands of Medicine Wheel that was fixed into the wheel were released, then she pushed out those hands towards Kazuki. Enormous magic power was concentrating in those two hands, it was going to gush out from there.

“Release everything right here… Mitakuye Oyasin(The Proper Self)!”

{Paapa, feel me! Because I too am a part of Wakan Tanka!!}

Just before it happened, Stella shouted that to him. Kazuki turned his consciousness to his bond with Stella.

Stella—200

Stella who was already dead yet still showed herself in front of Kazuki, had became an existence that had everything of her chipped off except that positivity level. That number of positivity level was that he could use all the Summoning Magic of Stella’s contracted Diva. At the same time Stella was already the Great Spirit.

“Heaven and earth produce together with me, all creation become one with me… O the pulsation of everything in one, wash away all the world’s error and correct it… release everything right here!”

Kazuki also chanted. From both his feet that stepped on the earth, he could feel enormous magic power pumped up into his body. Right now, both he and Medicine Wheel were dipping into exactly the same power source.

“The one who is mistaken is your side!”

Kazuki also pointed his hands at Medicine Wheel and thrust his hands out.

“Mitakuye Oyasin!”

Kazuki also invoked exactly the same magic.

“…Why!?” Medicine Wheel yelled.

{I am also Great Spirit after all.}

Stella’s avatar quietly said that.

{Everything in one. The other side of death is life. I who am trying to defeat you am you. You lose to your own power… This was already the decided outcome since the bond between paapa and me was created!!}

The Great Spirit’s existence had been denied from its root when a traitor appeared inside it.

Pure green magic power was gushing out from the hand of Medicine Wheel. It was pure magic power before it was used to cause some kind of phenomenon. The instant that magic power collided with something, that something would be distorted following the will of Medicine Wheel, it was the surge of possibility itself. But the exact same surge was fired from Kazuki’s both hands, colliding with hers. Both Medicine Wheel and also Kazuki were pumping out magic power as much as possible from Great Spirit and continued to fire.

The colliding magic powers quietly dispersed and blended into the air, returning to Astrum.

There was nothing happening in that place—no, if the phenomenon that was happening right now was analyzed, what was happening was that the enormous magic power body called Great Spirit was self-destructing on its own accord through the confrontation between Kazuki and Medicine Wheel.

“This… something like this is a severe bug…”

Medicine Wheel was whispering in stupor.

“Thi, this is…?” Arthur who was continuing to fight the illusionary death woke up. Kazuki guessed that she would also wake up by her own strength if some time passed. However the battle was almost over already.

The comrades at the surrounding who continued to fight believing in Kazuki, turned back to Kazuki’s direction all at once. The attacking plants and animals suddenly stopped moving like a machine that had its electricity cut off.

The surrounding trees turned into green light and began to disintegrate.

Losing their magic power supply source(Great Spirit), Wakan Tanka began to vanish.

Kazuki held Ame no Murakumo aloft and dashed forward. With a single diagonal flash, the great tree was sliced slantingly.

The large wheel that was connected with the giant tree vanished. “This is… this is!” Eimi Moore that was fused with the wheel fell down while raising a scared voice.

Kazuki caught that small body with both his arms.

“…There is nothing that you need to fear anymore.”

When he looked back, Stella nodded a little before turning into grains of glittering white magic power, vanishing from that place.

Epilogue – Floating

Part 1

Inside one room of the hotel, Clark in her suit and Eimi wearing folklore design t-shirt and damaged jeans of the so called hippie style, both were sitting on chairs while facing away from each other. The one who first opened her mouth was Clark towards Kazuki who was facing the two who were like that.

"North America accepted co-existence and co-prosperity with Japan. Though I don't particularly care whether it's in the form of an alliance or you ruling us."

"…" Eimi wordlessly turned away her face, showing her side face that still had some childishness remaining in it.

Great Spirit had been completely terminated. The attitude of the girl who was suddenly cut off from her faith was obstinate.

Looking at Eimi who didn't say anything, Clark hit her briskly with her elbow. From that Eimi sternly looked back at Clark and yelled "Why are you that easily using violence!"

"Somehow… from now on spend some time and restore your sisterly relationship…"

When Kazuki said that, Clark said "Right" shortly while Eimi turned her face away and looked down.

He guessed that Clark secretly had the thought of fighting for the sake of taking back her little sister.

In contrast with that, Eimi was… she was really trying to kill her big sister for the sake of her faith.

The talk between them wouldn't be so simple by any means.

In any case, the community called South America had already ceased to exist.

The American continent was unified into one.

—The night of that day, tsunamis were observed in every part of the world. As if something was surfacing somewhere in the sea.

Part 2

‘How tedious’… Aisu Ikousai thought while doing training in her solitary cell at the underground prison.

The wall of the solitary cell wasn’t created from adamantite, but in her condition that was attached with a Limiter this cell was not something so shoddy that she could break.

She had a discovery, all this time thinking only about polishing her secret sword technique might have made her neglect the basic training.

However she gradually yearned for a sword. She yearned for actual fighting. This plain prison uniform was also hard to tolerate.

She wanted to fight with that man(Hayashizaki Kazuki). She couldn’t stay like this.

Of course… all of the three Sacred Treasures were taken by the other side, she didn’t have a chance of victory at all right now where the other side had been awakened to the King’s Authority.

Power was necessary… She had to plunder a new power from someone somewhere…

Nagoya’s Knight Order garrison that became a battleground in the war with Yamato hadn’t been seized back yet and so the underground of the hotel was still used as a prison. The treatment for the political prisoners of Yamato’s top brass and the Shrine Maidens that were possessed by illegal Divas who were put in custody there still hadn’t been decided, the progress was so slow because this case was full of unprecedented matters.

The original owner of the hotel refused the hotel’s use as prison after the hotel’s requisition, He demanded compensation rather than asking for the return of his hotel.

In fact, the only death that happened in that war came out in this hotel.

That was correct, there was someone who died here—and then there was someone who knew that dead person.

Magic power of teleportation whirled in the dim light. *BIKIBIKIBIKI!* A crack ran through the space.

The knight who stood guard screamed from the phenomenon that was happening before his eyes. It was similar with the Cancer that spilled out Demon Beasts into this world. The guard thought that was what was happening right now.

In actuality, the figure that appeared was an existence that was even more sinister than that of a mere Demon Beast.

"…Helheim Drive(God of Death's Encroachment)."

All of a sudden, a materialized Diva appeared in front of the guard's eyes.

Just imagine how much of a shock that knight felt. He raised an astonished scream while drawing out his sword but it didn't even turn into a real fight, the knight was one-sidedly struck with jet black attack magic and collapsed.

The figure that appeared was the god of death of Norse Mythology, Hel.

<Helheim Drive>—Hel [searched up] the soul of the dead through Astrum, then she could eat that soul while teleporting to the place of that soul.

At this time Hel appeared here by taking into herself the dead person that left behind the residual thought and magic power in this place like a bounded ghost. It was her acquaintance as a top brass of Yamato—Hayashi Shizuka.

Defeated by Hayashizaki Kazuki and became a prisoner, fearing Telepathy and truth serum used on her to make her leak the information of her mother country she carried out suicide inside the solitary cell, she was an infiltrator from Chukadou.

…Though Hel felt that it was as expected a residual thought that was full with malediction.

Hel tilted her head being driven by an unexpected thought.

The thought that she felt when she took that soul inside herself was something that was very far apart from an image of when the soul's owner was alive.

Now that Hayashi Shizuka had died she was released from the tenacity she possessed when she was alive, in reverse some of the thought hidden deep inside her heart that even she herself was not aware of was released to the surface instead.

{How is that girl Karin doing I wonder…}

Such thought that could even be called as warm was taken in into Hel along with the residual magic power. 'This Karin, who is she again…' Hel kept tilting her head.

A strange thought was taken in into herself, but well, that kind of thing was trivial. Rather than that she had to quickly search for her objective. Hel easily found a bunch of keys from the pocket of the collapsed guard before she looked for the cell of her objective.

There was sounds that came from upstairs. It seemed that the knights filling this place had detected the abnormality from the scream of the guard and Hel's magic power wavelength.

…But even against just mere knights, with her current condition she wanted to avoid battle if she could.

In panic Hel found the solitary cell at the deepest area where a name plate [Aisu Ikousai] was attached onto the door, then she opened the door energetically. "Ikousai-!"

"Hel…!?"

Ikousai raised her body in amazement.

“Ikousai, you’re safe-!? You are not tortured-!?”

Hel ran noisily at Ikousai and grasped her hand. Hel’s voice was completely excited.

“Hayashizaki Kazuki is not a person that would do such a thing.” Ikousai calmly answered.

“Hmph… fine, then let’s escape!”

“…Why, for one of Loki’s ally to expressly come for someone like me is just…”

“This is not papa’s order, it’s my own decision.”

Since Hel trained together with Ikousai in order to control Susanoo’s power, Hel harbored a warm emotion towards Ikousai that seldom happened for a god of death… and not only that.

“A battle will begin from now on. We are [the loser’s come-back group] you know.”

She was a loser, Ikousai was also a loser, that common point between them was what made Hel take Ikousai’s hand.

Ikousai harbored a discomfort towards Hel’s hand. The texture of Hel’s hand was thin. Her materialization was lacking.

Hel’s divinity was wounded from her defeat against Kazuki, she was still unable to store enough magic power to maintain her materialization.

The <Helheim Drive> that Hel used in order to sneak into this place further fatally consumed her magic power.

“…My magic power is still not restored enough. But Ikousai, the power of you and Susanoo is different, you still have a possibility.”

<The Power of Usurpation>.

“That’s why”, Hel gripped Ikousai’s hand tightly.

Ikousai felt heat lit inside her chest. Hearing the words of battle for the loser’s come-back quietly made her cooling heart inside the solitary cell to be lit into a red hot fire.

Part 3

"Thanks to Arthur's advice that such a thing might happen, we were able to get through this with only insignificant damage. My thanks."

Clark said that gratitude in regards to the sudden natural disaster.

According to the INMARSAT transmission call, it seemed that there was no considerable damage to Japan too.

At Kazuki's room in hotel Yggdrasil, Clark and Arthur were gathering.

Outside the window, the night scenery of Las Vegas that Kazuki had protected to the end was shining brilliantly.

"Do you know what happened?"

America was a country of civilization on a higher level than Japan. Clark had already made the investigation without even needing Kazuki to tell her.

"The source of the tsunami was the sudden change of submarine topography in a large scale. Due to that… something happened at the Atlantic Ocean. Somewhere in the Atlantic Ocean where there was nothing reflected on GPS until now, there was a magic power cloud that was suddenly generated and the GPS cannot display right now. But, there is something like a continent that can be seen faintly there."

"A continent surfaced from the bottom of the sea and caused tsunamis…?"

Clark spread a map on the side table in Kazuki's room and pointed at a spot on it.

Looking at that, Arthur's body trembled while she was talking. "That coordinates at Atlantic Ocean close to America's east coast… that's the continent that was talked about in legend, the [Atlantis] of the ancient times."

At that time, *kon kon* the door was knocked. Before Kazuki could reply, "Excuse me a little." An unknown girl's voice came before the door opened.

Who appeared was a woman wearing a green convertible collar coat and a hat, all of her clothes were all green.

"Robin Hood!" Arthur said.

"How did you come all this way here?"

Clark questioned with a stern voice. That was because the woman was in this kind of place past the country border.

"That kind of thing doesn't really matter now, right? King Arthur, there is information that is not too good."

"…It's fine to say it here. What happened?"

Not paying any attention to Clark, the woman with an aloof atmosphere gave her report.

“Loki, China, Russia, those three countries attacked Britain. In one night the Great Britain museum had fell, the inheritance of Basileus Basileon… [Rosetta Stone] was stolen.”

Kazuki reflexively had his mouth wide open and gulped his breath. However Arthur was not as surprised as Kazuki.

“Just in one night? Even though the Round Table are present, Germany and Italy also gave us their cooperation, we also have contact in Japan yet there was not even time to hold out until my return, that means… a betrayer huh.”

Robin Hood nodded.

“Correct, the inside was infiltrated with Mordred’s guidance. They did it without facing any resistance.”

Mordred! Inside his heart Kazuki yelled that name. That name was the name of the knight that betrayed the knights of the round table in the legend and in the end struck down each other with King Arthur.

“Lancelot was also with them right? Sheesh, their betrayal had been determined in the legend…” Arthur talked with a calm tone. “In any case if their betrayal really cannot be avoided, then this timing is still better I think. Ahead of this there will be many more worse timings for them to betray us.”

“It’s also a harsh matter that we have to keep people who we knew from the start would betray us as comrades.”

“But my pledge to reproduce Mythology by resignedly accepting subordinate that I know will betray me is carried out. This pledge will surely grant me a great strength.”

Both of them were having a conversation that was somewhat strange. No, wait a second.

“That betrayal thing you said, does that mean this Mordred has become Loki’s comrade?”

“I think that’s what happened.”

Loki plus Naiarlatoteph and Mordred? …What a messed up trio!

“Right now, what is the situation?”

“The situation is over. With the Rosetta Stone stolen, Queen Hrotsvits said [there is no meaning to cooperate] and abandoned the battle. When Loki and his group accomplished their objective they quickly retreated. Queen Regina tried to pursue… but most likely she was defeated by China’s Queen Fu Xi, her whereabouts went missing at Dover Strait.”

—As expected, even Arthur had her expression wavered. “Regina was defeated you say!?”

At that time Kazuki turned to the direction of the window. Some kind of a lump of magic power was flying with a terrific speed.

Cutting through the night scenery of Las Vegas—probably from the damaged part of the dome, a silhouette of a Demon Beast spreading its wings widely.

It was a shadow he had seen before—Fafnir!!

Just from the wind pressure of it getting closer cracked Kazuki’s room’s window all at once, then a voice he had heard before reached the inside of the room.

“So everyone is all here-! Hahaha, I’m thankful here we can skip the greeting!!”

“Loki!!” On the back of Fafnir, there were Loki and Naiarlatoteph straddling it.

“That green chap there… that’s a face I caught sight at Britain. You were quite strong… It seems like that you all had come here earlier than me and taught the people here the course of events. It’s great that I can even skip the explanation! Fufufu, my rival, it’s great that you too are working hard here, but I too was working hard at Britain too yeah. After all I really can’t stomach that there is information that I ain’t knowing anything about.”

Arthur shrugged her shoulder and shook her head as if she was saying ‘good grief’ wordlessly.

Loki turned to her saying “Arthur…”

“…The wise man of beginning [Basileus Basileon], he still lives huh.”

“That’s right.” Arthur answered. “That gentleman is waiting in that land.”

Loki turned around the neck of Fafnir and turned his back at Kazuki and co.

“Hayashizaki Kazuki! The wise man is also important, but I’m waiting for you! Not anyone else! You are my only rival!!”

The dragon’s wings flapped and Loki once again left towards the night sky, leaving behind his last words.

“Finally the long awaited Ragnarok(Mythology War) is here! We are going to settle everything at the Mythology Continent Atlantis for sure! The conclusion of the battle of Kings(Basileus)… and then the conclusion between me(Chaos) and you(Kazuki)!!”

Afterword

This is not really a volume number that is especially special but, hooray! It's the 11th volume! Every single volume until now are always in danger at the edge of the cliff, this is Mihara Mitsuki. This volume's page became slightly thick again…

In the middle of writing this volume, something odd happened to my body. Even though there was no big external wound on me, but a symptom come out, the tip of my tongue was always tingling. When it was examined, it was something like a tongue sickness that comes from stress and disordered living. This was bad, I strongly thought that I gotta get away from my stress, the moment I finished my manuscript, I bought a lot of sake and food with the speed of light, for three days and three nights, I held a debauched feast together with 2D beautiful girls across the monitor, and so I easily got cured. However I thought that I still cannot conclude my stress is over yet, so I further ordered porn book from Amazon-san and just when I did it I was told by the editor K-nyan "Write the afterword", this is the happening of just now. To tell me to work in this kind of time, if you are really the editor in charge of me then I want you to worry more about my health! (Drunkard)

…The point is, as long as the writing pace was moving well just as planned and there is no cause for panic when the deadline got closer then everything is fine. The difference of the time to relax and the time of bloody battle is extreme, not able to write in a fairly uniform pace is worrying. This series is also entering the climax, there was quite a big pressure when I started writing. It made me want to go back at the me in November who was saying "Even though I spend a day but there is not even half a page that is finished eh—" and hit him while yelling "This is for the Christmas overtime! This is for the New Year's Eve overtime! And then this is for the New Year overtime!".

That's already every time's occurrence, but in the middle of writing I'm going to wonder "Can I really finish writing this volume?" while becoming unable to picture my future self that had finished writing the manuscript. Then when I reached the endgame I'm going to wonder "Can I cross this difficult part?" feeling as if I'm in the end of my rope that it felt like masochism just to barely finish writing the fighting scene. Speaking of the feeling of liberation that I got the instant I finished writing the last battle, it felt like most of my body and soul ascended to heaven. Just as fierce as the fighting of Kazuki and co, the author – Mihara Mitsuki's battle (no one was watching except editor K-nyan) was also completely roused. When I thought that the editor K-nyan too surely had his hand clenched hard in cold sweat… I really feel regretful of that…. Even though I had already understand from the start that I was going to suffer, just like every time I constructed a plot for a thick volume, as I thought I might really be a masochist.

To go along with this back and forth masochist writing, toward all the persons concerned I said my thanks…rather than that I give my apology.

The illustrator CHuN-san, because of the manuscript's lateness the ordering of the illustration also got really late, still I thank you very much for the amazing illustrations even amidst such severe schedule. Monrin-san that kindly do the manga serialization, your work also truly have amazing quality that I looked forward every month. I guess there are also a lot of reader that enjoyed the manga, and like that move to pick the original work. Recently the fifth volume of the manga was published last month (advertisement).

When the editor K-nyan said to me "If the sale got postponed or anything then I'm going to sock your face", my chest reflexively got really tight thinking "You really need me that much…♡". And then of course all of you honored reader! Thanks to everyone's support, Magika can lively and carefreely, rapidly growing into a blessed series. Heading toward even higher excitement, I will writhe in pain while doing my best for the next volume too! This is Mihara Mitsuki!

Translator's Notes & References

Back to Volume 10